

Table of Contents

I. In the Beginning.....	5
1. The Origin of Man.....	5
2. Man Consists of Three Parts.....	6
3. God Gave Man Dominion.....	8
4. The Probation of Man.....	10
5. The Fall of Man.....	11
Review Questions- Unit 1.....	24
6. The Origin of Satan.....	25
7. The Kingdom of Darkness.....	27
8. Trials, Tests & Temptations.....	31
Review Questions- Unit 2.....	40
II. Our Glorious Redemption.....	41
1. Blood Covenant.....	41
2. Authority Given to Human Beings on this Earth.....	43
3. Death, Burial & Resurrection.....	46
4. Seated Together with Jesus at the Right Hand of the Father.....	54
Review Questions- Unit 3.....	58
5. Baptized Into the Name of Jesus.....	59
6. The Court Room of Heaven.....	69
Review Questions- Unit 4.....	77
III. The Name of Jesus.....	78
1. Man of Miracles.....	78
2. How Jesus obtained a more excellent Name: Inheritance, Bestowal, Conquest.....	86
3. The Name of Jesus- What is Behind it!.....	95
4. The Great Commission.....	99
Review Questions- Unit 5.....	101
5. The Unqualified Use of the Name of Jesus.....	109
Review Questions- Unit 6.....	117
6. The Place of Faith in the Use of the Name.....	118
7. The Use of the Name.....	126
8. Review Questions- Unit 7.....	133

Table of Contents

IV. Spiritual Warfare.....	134
1. The Mandate Continues- Setting the Captives Free.....	134
2. The Name of Jesus – Still Controversial.....	135
3. Enforcing Satan’s Defeat.....	138
4. Our Place of Authority in Combat.....	146
Review Questions- Unit 8.....	160
5. Another look at the Trichotomy of Man.....	161
6. Deliverance Ministry Mechanics.....	168
A) Is it the devil or just Flesh?.....	168
Review Questions- Unit 9.....	177
B) The Difference between Oppression, Obsession and Possession.....	178
C) Spiritual Warfare: Are we Wrestling or Resting?.....	186
Review Questions- Unit 10.....	197
D) Pulling Down Strongholds?.....	198
E) Praying Scripturally.....	206
F) Is Deliverance Ministry Scriptural.....	214
Review Questions- Unit 11.....	220
7. Common Questions Concerning Demons.....	221
Review Questions- Unit 12.....	231



Foreword

Luke 10:17-19

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, “Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.” He replied, “I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you.”

The authority in the Name of Jesus belongs to us whether we know about it or not, it is still ours. Many Christians think if the Bible says it is ours it is going to work automatically. For example if we are a citizen of this country we have a right to vote whether we know about it or not, it is our right, but we still have to act upon it. So it is with spiritual things, we are citizens of Heaven, if we don't know about it we can't experience it even though it belongs to us. It's ours whether we know about it or not.

Actually, a lot of things are ours and we just don't know about them yet; unfortunately, we can't enjoy the blessings of them either. Knowledge acted upon brings results. We can have authority and not know it, but it won't work even though it's ours. We can have authority and know it, but still if it's not acted upon, won't produce any results either. The devil doesn't want people to find out what belongs to them- Saint or Sinner by obscuring the knowledge of truth. The child of God is no longer to be dominated by the devil and he can't dominate the child of God unless they allow him to- the authority needs to be appropriated otherwise the devil will dominate us.

Meditating on and praying the Epistle Prayers is the key to receiving more spiritual wisdom and revelation concerning the Authority of the Believer- Ephesians 1:17-19; 3:14-21 and Colossians 1:9-14. Let's continually pray them for ourselves and other Christians putting their name in it. Praying general prayers like, “God bless so and so...” has no affect. The key is for believers to have their spiritual eyes enlightened to understand what Jesus has already done for them in redemption so they can act on it- now that brings results! Understand that the Holy Spirit reveals these things through the Word- 1 Corinthians chapter 2- speaking spiritual truths in spiritual words. Acquiring a full understanding is key!

Most of us have been spiritually brain washed and brought up to confess our weaknesses and failings and to think of our lack of ability as a mark of spirituality and humility- friends this is simply scriptural ignorance. Oh, that our eyes would be opened, that our souls would dare rise into the realm of His Almighty power where the Name would mean to us all that the Father has invested in it. That we would come to realize our high privileges in Christ Jesus. The scope of this subject has only been scratched upon in later years. Here and there, some of us have experienced the authority vested in the Name of Jesus. We have seen the lame walk, the deaf hear, the blind see; those on the verge of death brought back instantly to health and vigor; but, so far, none of us have been able to take a permanent place in our privileges and abide where we may enjoy the fullness of this mighty power.

However, we have a conviction that before the Lord Jesus returns, there will be a mighty army of believers who will learn the secret of living in the Name, of reigning in life as kings, living the victorious, magnificent, resurrection life of the Son of God among men. If our minds could only grasp the fact that Satan is paralyzed, stripped of his armor by the Lord Jesus, and that disease and sickness are servants and made subject to this Name. That at the Name of Jesus all that is evil must depart, it would be easy to live in this Resurrection Realm.

“The Authority of the Believer” – Reference Material:

The following sources of material have made significant and substantial contributions to the content of this training lesson.

“The Triumphant Church” by Kenneth E. Hagin

©1993: RHEMA Bible Church aka Kenneth Hagin Ministries, Inc.

“The name of Jesus” by Kenneth E. Hagin

© 1979 RHEMA Bible Church aka Kenneth Hagin Ministries, Inc.

“The Believer’s Authority” by Kenneth E. Hagin

© 1984 RHEMA Bible Church aka Kenneth Hagin Ministries, Inc.

“Bible Answers to Man’s Questions on Demons” by Kenneth E. Hagin

© 1983 RHEMA Bible Church aka Kenneth Hagin Ministries, Inc.

“The Wonderful Name of Jesus” by E.W. Kenyon

© 1998 Kenyon’s Gospel Publishing Society

“Your Spiritual Authority” by Charles Capps

© 1994 Charles Capps Ministries

Unless noted otherwise, all Bible quotations are from the New International Version, Zondervan Bible Publishers, 1978.

I. In the Beginning

As we begin our epic journey on this timely message, we need to first lay a foundation of study in our origins in the Garden of Eden. What was set in motion in the beginning has great bearing on this subject.

God created the universe through the Word of His power. All things are sustained and have their being because of the spoken Word of Jesus. You will find throughout the Scriptures that God never did anything without saying it first. God is a faith God, His kingdom operates on faith principles. The source of God's power is found in the Word of His power. It is through that same Word that we will receive His power in our lives to frame our own world. As Christians our only power is found in speaking God's Word.

**Jesus is the perfect imprint
and very image of God's
nature, upholding and
maintaining and guiding and
propelling the universe by His
mighty word of power.
Hebrews 1:3 (AMP)**



Jesus is the express will, and spoken Word of the Father. That is why Scripture says the universe was created from the Father **through** the Son; through God's spoken WORD (Jesus)- Colossians 1:15-16; Hebrews 1:2; 1 Corinthians 8:6; Romans 11:36

John 1:1-4

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. In him was life, and that life was the light of men.

1. The Origin of Man

Mankind was created in the image of God. Now you will note that the words, "us" and "our" is used in Genesis 1:26. This supports the doctrine of the triune Godhead. God is one expressed in three distinct persons, God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit- Matthew 28:19. So what does it mean for us to be made in the image of God? Genesis 1:26, *"Then God said, 'Let us make man in our image, in our likeness...'"*

Created as spirit beings!

Through the act of pro-creation our bodies are formed in the womb, but it is God who creates the human spirit. At conception, God places the human spirit within that tiny body. The real you and the conceived physical body at conception are united by God Almighty! Psalms 139:13-14, *"For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb. I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well."*

Zechariah 12:1

“The Lord who stretches out the heavens, who lays the foundation of the earth, and who forms the spirit of man within him...”

Isaiah 57:16

“I will not accuse forever, nor will I always be angry, for then the spirit of man would faint before me- the breath of man that I have created.”

It’s the spirit of a man that brings animation or life to the physical body.

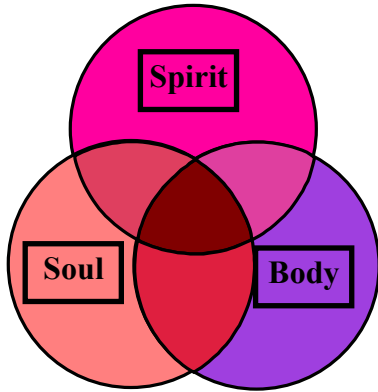
James 2:26

As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without deeds is dead.

2. Man Consists of Three Parts

Man was created a tri-cotomy just as the glorious Godhead is referred to as the Divine Trinity. We are not just a physical body just as the Godhead is not the Father God only. I am a spirit, I have a soul, and I live in a body. The Godhead is comprised of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. The three parts to our identity are Spirit, Soul & Body.

May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
1Thessalonians 5:23



Some are led to believe that man is only a di-cotomy. Being two parts: soul and body. They believe that the eternal aspect of man is his soul, meaning his will, intellect, and emotions. Scripture however, points out that there is as much difference between the spirit and soul of man as there is between his soul, and body.

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

According to the above Scripture, the soul and spirit of man can be divided or distinguished as separate entities. Only through God’s Word can we make that distinction. Something needs to be pointed out here, man is the only creature in this class on earth. The animal kingdom is not comprised of spirit beings. They are physical beings that are driven by instinct. Animals do have souls, because they have limited reasoning faculties, and these faculties are of the soul. Animals also display affection, and this, too, is part of the soul. However animals are not spirits, they are merely soul and body. When animals die, that is the end unless you can find Scripture that says otherwise.

So where is our spirit located you may ask, the Bible has the answer.

The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord, searching all the inward parts of the belly. Proverbs 20:27 KJV

But whoever drinks of the water that I will give him, will never thirst; but the water that I will give him will be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. John 4:14 KJV

If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believes on me as the Scriptures have said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. John 7:38 KJV



The heart in Biblical context refers to the very center of man's being- his/her spirit.

It is the spirit of man that is born again- **John 3:3; 2 Corinthians 5:17**

The new birth is a spiritual circumcision- **Romans 2:29; Colossians 2:11; Titus 3:4; Acts 7:51**

It is the spirit of man that has the life, love and nature of God in it- **Romans 5:5; 1 John 5:12**

It is with your spirit that you believe- **Acts 16:14; 2 Corinthians 3:3; Romans 10:10-11**

It is with your spirit that you worship God and do his will- **Ephesians 5:19; 6:6**

It is in your spirit that the Holy Spirit dwells, your body is the temple of your spirit- **1Cor. 3:16;6:19**

Let's define the three parts of man in more detail:

Man is a Spirit (*Conscience*)

- Conscience is the voice of our human spirit

He has a Soul (*Emotions, Will, Intellect*)

- Reason is the voice of our soul

He lives in a Body (*5 Senses*)

- Feelings is the voice of our physical body

With our spirit we contact God, with our soul we contact the intellectual realm, and with our body we contact the physical or natural world. Conscience is the voice of our spirit, it is the inner moral compass that tells us what is right and wrong- Hebrews 10:22; 1 Samuel 24:5; 25:31; Acts 24:16; 1 Corinthians 8:7; 10:25-27. When we are born again, our conscience becomes a safe guide. The conscience of an unbeliever is seared and corrupted; permitting him to do whatever he wants and is thus, not a safe guide- 1 Timothy 4:2; Titus 1:15.

Genesis 2:7

The LORD God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being.

Adam's name means in the Hebrew- Ruddy, to flush or turn rosy; red. Adam's body was formed from the dust of the earth or red clay- so were the animals and birds. Scientists say that the 16 compound ingredients found in clay make up the 16 primary elements of the human body. The earth supports and transfers vitamins and minerals into plant and animal life, which we consume in order to nourish our physical bodies that originated from the ground.

Genesis 2:19

Now the LORD God had formed out of the ground all the beasts of the field and all the birds of the air.

Job 12:10

In his hand is the life of every creature and the breath of all mankind.

Man alone, of all created beings received the breath of God. God's spirit-life was breathed into the lump of clay called the human body and it became animated as Adam (spirit/soul) took residence in his new earth suit. As a result, he could now contact the natural world through this new physical body or house.

Our identity as human beings are as those created in God's image and likeness. However, God did not stop there, He also gave us a divine purpose- basically a job to do!

3. God Gave Man Dominion

By virtue of creation, the earth and all that God has made belongs to God because He is the author of creation. God is the owner and He holds the title deed; it all belongs to Him, so in this aspect He is sovereign.

Psalms 24:1-2

The earth is the LORD's, and everything in it, the world, and all who live in it; for he founded it upon the seas and established it upon the waters.

Haggai 2:8- "The silver is mine and the gold is mine," declares the LORD Almighty.

Yet as soon as He finished restoring the earth to a habitable state, He turned it over to Adam on a lease, to be a steward and caretaker of it- an earth lease. God gave Adam the keys to the car so to speak, to get in the driver's seat and take charge for a specified period of time- we call this "Adam's Lease."

Genesis 1:26-28

"...and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."

God created mankind to rule over this creation that God had just restored from the judgment that had made the original creation formless and void.

Psalms 8:3-9

When I consider your heavens, the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars, which you have set in place, what is man that you are mindful of him, the son of man that you care for him? You made him a little lower than the heavenly beings (God) and crowned him with glory and honor. You made him ruler over the works of your hands; you put everything under his feet: all flocks and herds, and the beasts of the field, the birds of the air, and the fish of the sea, all that swim the paths of the seas. O LORD, our Lord, how majestic is your name in all the earth!

Psalm 8:3-9 AMP

When I view and consider your heavens, the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars which you have ordained and established. What is man, that you are mindful of him, the son of [earthborn] man, that you care for him? Yet you have made him but a little lower than God [or heavenly beings], and you have crowned him with glory and honor. You made him to have dominion over the works of your hand; you have put all things under his feet.

Notice that God made man a little lower than Himself. Why some translators substitute “elohiym” which is the name for GOD for angels is beyond me, yet other translations do use “God.” God made us a little lower than Himself not a little lower than the angels.

‘elohiym (el-o-heem’); plural of OT:433; gods in the ordinary sense; but specifically used (in the plural thus, especially with the article) of the supreme God; occasionally applied by way of deference to magistrates; and sometimes as a superlative: KJV - angels, X exceeding, God (gods)- dess, -ly), X (very) great, judges, X mighty.

God made Adam and Eve the gods of this world!

Psalms 82:6

I said, “You are ‘gods’; you are all sons of the Most High.”

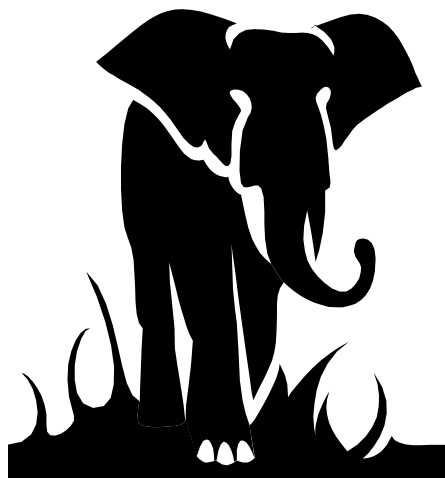
Jesus himself attested to this fact!

John 10:34-35

Jesus answered them, “Is it not written in your Law, ‘I have said you are gods’? If he called them ‘gods,’ to whom the word of God came-and the Scripture cannot be broken.”

“Ruler”, “Dominion”, “In Charge” “gods” is what God had done for man in the beginning! Now before we get too much of a big head, remember the fall of man in the garden. However, it is imperative that we realize the significance of the position of authority that God had originally elevated man to in the beginning.

When God gave dominion to Adam in the Garden, he was instructed by God to keep and watch over it. God made Adam the god of this new world He had made. Adam had authority to name all the animals God had created. The important thing to consider about Adam’s authority, is that first of all it was given to him from God. Secondly, this authority was expressed or exercised through words. Man is the only living creature on this earth who is a spirit being, and dominates through the use of words. If Adam had a problem in the garden, he was expected to release faith filled words to change things just like God did through the act of creation. Physically he would not be able to subdue the whole earth. He had to do it by faith and through the power of words.



Genesis 1:26-28

Then God said, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground.” So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, “Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground.”

It's the Father's will for us to speak His words after Him, and thus manifest His kingdom in the earth. When Jesus taught His disciples how to pray in Matthew 6:9-13 He said, "*Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*" I believe this is accomplished through speaking, and acting on God's Word. We know that God's Word is His will, and when we speak it in faith, His kingdom manifests on the earth in the form of salvation, healing, deliverance, love and so on. Words are powerful when released out of our mouth, because they carry spiritual forces:

John 6:63- Jesus had said that His words were full of a substance called, "Spirit Life."

Acts 20:32- Paul stated that God's word is full of a substance called, "Grace."

Romans 10:10- Paul also declared that God's Word is full of a substance called, "Faith."

4. The Probation of Man

In Genesis 2:15, God told Adam to "take care of it or to keep it." Which implies to guard and protect it from intruders. This is the first reference to man's adversary- the devil. Let's look at the Hebrew meaning:

shamar (shaw-mar'); a primitive root; properly, to hedge about (as with thorns), i.e. guard; generally, to protect, attend to, etc.: KJV - beware, be circumspect, take heed (to self), keep (-er self,), mark, look narrowly, observe, preserve, regard, reserve, save (self), sure, (that lay) wait (for), watch (-man).

Why put that tree of the knowledge of good and evil in the garden in the first place anyway? What good is it to have a free will if we do not have an opportunity to make a choice to obey or disobey God's command? Adam was created with the potential of immortality. Death would occur only if Adam disobeyed the command of God relative to eating from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

Genesis 2:16-17

And the LORD God commanded the man, "You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die."

Man was created in God's image. He was endowed with intelligence, emotion and free will. He was a free moral agent; therefore, he was capable of making a choice. Since man was created for God's glory (Isaiah 43:7), and since he could best glorify God by freely choosing to worship and serve Him, it was necessary that Adam be given an opportunity to make a choice.

For Adam and Eve, the Garden of Eden was not only a home in paradise; it was also a place of probation, a place to test their obedience and loyalty to God. The probation of Adam and Eve was based upon a clear direct commandment, a simple law of works. The law had two parts:

- 1) A positive part, consisting of a glorious provision
- 2) A negative part, consisting of a clear prohibition

It needs to be explained how beings who were created with holy natures could sin. Our first parents had holy natures, but they did not yet have holy characters. A holy nature is the result of creation; a holy character is the result of testing in which a choice for good is made and where a choice for evil was possible. A choice for evil results in evil character. God desired the worship and service of beings with holy moral characters. Free choice then was necessary for the development of mature holiness and blessedness. With free choice there is, of necessity, the possibility of a wrong choice. Adam and Eve made the wrong choice with disastrous consequences, both for themselves and for the human race.

The probationary commandment given to Adam was personal, not moral. There was no obvious wrong in eating from the forbidden tree; the Fall of Adam and Eve was the result of disobedience, not the result of a clearly immoral act. The prohibition of eating from the tree of good and evil was a testing law, because the evil was not self-evident; the evil was in the disobedience of the commandment. The fall of Adam and Eve resulted from a pure act of willful disobedience.

Yet Jesus came to earth as a man, yet still being divinely God without His divine abilities. This made it fair, in order for Jesus to experience the full force of temptation, having a weak human body that He indwelt. Yet Jesus overcame every enticement and solicitation of sin that was thrown at Him! As a result, He was qualified to take our place and be our substitute in order to pay the penalty for sin by giving His life that canceled the sentence of death that hung over us.

Hebrews 5:7-9

During the days of Jesus' life on earth, he offered up prayers and petitions with loud cries and tears to the one who could save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission. Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him.

Hebrews 4:15-16

For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one (Jesus) who has been tempted in every way, just as we are--yet was without sin.

If Adam had obeyed, resisting Satan's temptation, he would have possessed holy moral character, and would have risen to a new level of blessing and fellowship with God. There is a hint of this in the character and in the consequent translation of Enoch to heaven. Enoch developed holy character even after inheriting an Adamic nature.

Genesis 5:23-24

Altogether, Enoch lived 365 years. Enoch walked with God; then he was no more, because God took him away.

Hebrews 11:5-6

By faith Enoch was taken from this life, so that he did not experience death; he could not be found, because God had taken him away. For before he was taken, he was commended as one who pleased God.

If Adam had obeyed, he would have had heaven on earth. A loving God would not have subjected Adam to probation had it not been necessary for Adam's highest good.

5. The Fall of Man

Genesis 3:1

Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made.

In Genesis chapter three, the temptation of Adam and Eve is attributed to the serpent who was said to have been, "more crafty than any of the wild animals." Remember, that it was Adam's responsibility to keep or protect the Garden of Eden from intruders.

The serpent allowed Satan to manifest himself through it in order to address Adam and Eve with a proposition to rebel against God; just as he originally had done with one third of the angels.

Satan and his host of rebels (fallen angels and pre-Adamite spirits known as demons) were imprisoned on the earth without a kingdom. They had witnessed what God has done for mankind and were waiting for an opportunity to strike again at God by usurping Adam's authority.

Revelation 12:9

The great dragon was hurled down--that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray.

2 Corinthians 11:3

But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent's cunning, your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ.

Many scholars believe that the serpent was originally an upright animal and was the most beautiful of all the creatures. This seems likely because the curse upon the serpent reduced it to a crawling, slithering creature. Satan finally had an opportunity through the cooperation of the serpent to beguile Adam and Eve into committing high treason. The result was rebellion against God through disobedience and thus turning over man's dominion and authority over to Satan the usurper.

Jesus put it this way, the devil was not created as a part of God's redesign of earth and the introduction of mankind into this world. Satan was an outsider, an alien wanting in, a thief and a robber- "*but climbs in by some other way...*" Through the serpent and deceit, he tricked Adam and Eve to give over the keys to the kingdom. Satan's objective was to steal man from God as a way of getting back at God. Satan wanted to rule again and set up his kingdom of darkness and dominate mankind.

But Jesus became a man, born into this world through the virgin birth. Jesus is referred to "*the man who enters by the gate (and) is the shepherd of his sheep.*"

John 10:1-3

I tell you the truth, the man who does not enter the sheep pen by the gate, but climbs in by some other way, is a thief and a robber. The man who enters by the gate is the shepherd of his sheep. The watchman opens the gate for him, and the sheep listen to his voice. He calls his own sheep by name and leads them out.

Genesis 3:1

He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?'"

Here we see the first distortion of the truth. Remember, Satan is a liar and the father of it, as Jesus stated in John 8:45, "*When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies.*" It is important to notice that Satan did not appeal to Eve's desires until he first caused her to doubt the Lord. He began his temptation with the insinuating question, "Did God really say?" A question contrived to make Eve doubt God's goodness. Yet Eve corrects Satan by quoting what God said, if only the conversation would have ended at that point!

Genesis 3:2-3

The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'"

The question was followed by a statement meant to raise doubts about God's veracity, "*You will not surely die.*"

Genesis 3:4

“You will not surely die,” the serpent said to the woman.

With the seed of doubt already planted, Satan showed himself to be God’s enemy by making the bold accusation that God was depriving Adam and Eve of their rightful privilege of divine status.

Genesis 3:5

“For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

But they were already like God, created in His class, in His image and likeness. They already had everything! All Satan was offering them in disguise was for them to give him everything and become his slave. Here is something important that we should know, it’s a universal law, that a person becomes a slave to the person they obey. If Satan could get Adam and Eve to obey his words and do what he says, Adam and Eve would then become his slave and Satan would gain Adam’s dominion.

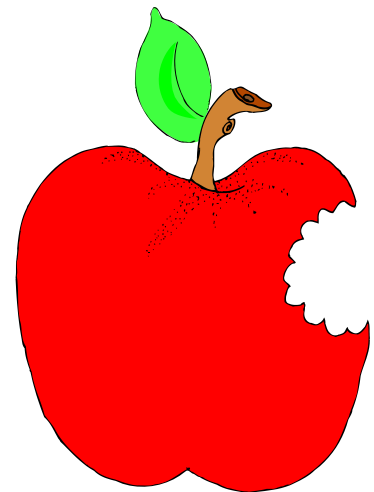
Romans 6:16-17

Don’t you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey-whether you are slaves to sin, which leads to death, or to obedience, which leads to righteousness?

Since words are containers, hearing God’s words produces faith. The same principle of words is true when we hear and believe the words of the devil. Since words are containers, hearing the devil’s words produces fear and results in death when believed and acted upon. His words are full of deadly poison. That is one reason why the Bible refers to him as a poisonous serpent. Whoever embraces and speaks his words embraces death. As free moral agents we have a free will to choose whose words we will speak. Before we make any decision, we must realize that we will experience in our own life the substance that is found in those words that we speak and obey.

Genesis 3:6-7

When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.



Once the seed of doubt had been planted and had germinated, the appeal for something more took effect. Eve may have thought, “If the Lord’s truth and goodness are suspect, one must pursue one’s own best interest.”

These were not inherently evil desires. They became evil because they were motivated by Satan and because they constituted disobedience to God’s specific commandment. Desire becomes “ungodly lust” when it is contrary to the Word of God.

James 1:13-18

When tempted, no one should say, “God is tempting me.” For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death. Don’t be deceived, my dear brothers. Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

The original sin is the same temptation used today in order to entrap people in the bondages of disobedience and slavery to the law of sin and death:

- The lust of the flesh- *Good for food*
- The lust of the eyes- *Pleasing to the eye*
- The pride of life- *Desirable for gaining wisdom*

1 John 2:15-17

Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from the Father but from the world. The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever.

Note that it was on these three levels that Satan had tempted Jesus- the last Adam.

Luke 4:1-2

Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit in the desert, where for forty days he was tempted by the devil. He ate nothing during those days, and at the end of them he was hungry.

Satan first appealed to His flesh, trying to get Jesus to obey his words just as he had done with Adam and Eve.

The Flesh

vs. 4:3-4

The devil said to him, “If you are the Son of God, tell this stone to become bread.” Jesus answered, “It is written: ‘Man does not live on bread alone.’”

The Pride of Life

Luke 4:5-8

The devil led him up to a high place and showed him in an instant all the kingdoms of the world. And he said to him, “I will give you all their authority and splendor, for it has been given to me, and I can give it to anyone I want to. So if you worship me, it will all be yours.” Jesus answered, “It is written: ‘Worship the Lord your God and serve him only.’”

The Lust of the Eyes

Luke 4:9-12

The devil led him to Jerusalem and had him stand on the highest point of the temple. “If you are the Son of God,” he said, “throw yourself down from here. For it is written: ‘He will command his angels concerning you to guard you carefully; they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.’” Jesus answered, “It says: ‘Do not put the Lord your God to the test.’”

Notice the statement that Satan made, *“I will give you all their authority and splendor, for it has been given to me, and I can give it to anyone I want to.”* That’s right sports fans, Satan stole that authority from Adam in the Garden of Eden. When Adam and Eve obeyed Satan and rebelled against God, Satan become the god of this world instead of Adam and Eve. When we say ‘world’ we are referring to the cultural, economic and political affairs of man, the world system is what Satan is god over. Creation itself still belongs to God. Satan is the god of this world order now, that’s why it’s in such a mess!

2 Corinthians 4:3-4

And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing. The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

1 John 5:19-20

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.

So what contributed to the fall of Adam and Eve, SELF, DOUBT and PRIDE!

Note that Adam was there the whole time, Eve was deceived but Adam was not- he was without excuse. Adam was ultimately responsible for the dominion that God had given him and should of grabbed that serpent by the neck and thrown it out of the garden, and that would have been the end of that. Unfortunately that is not what happened and the rest is history. After they each took that fatal bite, everything changed!

They lost God-consciousness and gained self-consciousness. They lost the power to do good only and gained the power to do evil. Thus, instead of becoming like God, they became unlike Him in that He has the power to do only good. It is morally impossible for Him to sin. Adam lost that glorious sinlessness and innocent looking countenance comparable to that of Elohim.

God had warned them back in Genesis 2:17 that when they ate the forbidden fruit, they would surely die.

Genesis 3:7

Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

Adam and Eve made coverings to deal with the shameful exposure of sin. Man has been trying to cover up sin ever since. Religion is one of the worst coverings man has fabricated. Through a system of self-righteous works, man tries to make up for past failures. Unfortunately, when a person sins, the sentence of death is invoked and there is nothing in his/her power to reverse it. If we do the crime we must do the time, unless there is someone else innocent enough to take our place as a substitute for sin- Jesus!

Let’s look at the results of the Fall:

Exposure:

Adam and Eve were clothed with the glory of God. That was their covering before they sinned. Since God Himself is light, it is no surprise that Adam and Eve reflected God’s glory, which was their original covering.

Psalms 104:2

He wraps himself in light as with a garment.

1 John 1:5-6

God is light; in him there is no darkness at all.

Revelation 1:16

In his right hand he held seven stars, and out of his mouth came a sharp double-edged sword. His face was like the sun shining in all its brilliance.

Even Moses, having been in God's presence emitted the glory of God as his face was radiant with light.

Exodus 34:33-35

When Moses finished speaking to them, he put a veil over his face. But whenever he entered the LORD's presence to speak with him, he removed the veil until he came out. And when he came out and told the Israelites what he had been commanded, they saw that his face was radiant. Then Moses would put the veil back over his face until he went in to speak with the LORD.

When Adam and Eve sinned, the glory of God left them and they became exposed- the light went out.

Fear:

The next consequential result from Adam and Eve's disobedience was fear. They had never experienced it before, it must have been horrible for them. 1 John 4:18, *"But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love."*

Genesis 3:8-10

Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the LORD God as he was walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and they hid from the LORD God among the trees of the garden. But the LORD God called to the man, "Where are you?" He answered, "I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid."

The Lord came to visit Adam and Eve as He had done every day before, during the cool of the day. Obviously God had already known what had happened, Adam and Eve had an opportunity to come clean with their sin and take responsibility and admit to God that they had failed. I wonder what would have happened if they had just admitted their mistake to God?

But instead, we see the blaming game being played; didn't you know that passing the buck first started in the Garden of Eden?

Genesis 3:11-13

And he said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree that I commanded you not to eat from?" The man said, "The woman you put here with me- she gave me some fruit from the tree, and I ate it." Then the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

The judicial results of the fall now ensued, since no one took responsibility, there was not much room for mercy, but only to pass judgment on the guilty parties:

Judgment on the Serpent

This apparently upright and beautiful creature was doomed to a crawling posture. The eating of "dust" was a term denoting utter humiliation- even into the millennial 1,000 year period in Isaiah 65:25.

Genesis 3:14

So the LORD God said to the serpent, “Because you have done this, “Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals! You will crawl on your belly and you will eat dust all the days of your life.”

The Woman

The judgment upon the woman was that of pain and sorrow in child bearing and submission to her husband. The woman’s lot in pagan countries is an exaggerated manifestation of the curse. Only in lands reached by the Christian Gospel has womanhood experienced a measure of redemption.

Genesis 3:16

To the woman he said, “I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you.”

The Man

The judgment upon the man was not that of labor, but of wearisome toil. This curse is evident in the world over in the fear of crop failure, the fear of unemployment, labor strife, bankruptcies and relentless competition.

Genesis 3:17-19

To Adam he said, “Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat of it,’ “Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food...”

The judgment upon the ground was that of lowered productivity and the introduction of thorns and thistles. Everyone knows that weeds grow easier than crops. Note, that marijuana which is a weed and other narcotics were introduced after the fall. These perverted substances are used to relinquish the control of the human mind over to evil spirits; for them to take control and perpetrate evil acts.

The Penalty of Death

The most disastrous consequence of the Fall was the introduction of death into the world. God had warned in Genesis 2:17, *“but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die.”*

Romans 6:23

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Ezekiel 18:20

The soul who sins is the one who will die.

Sin entered into the world through Adam and Eve’s high treason; their rebellious act of aligning themselves with Satan. As a result, death came into the world, reigning and dominating mankind.

Romans 5:12-14

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned- for before the law was given, sin was in the world. But sin is not taken into account when there is no law. Nevertheless, death reigned from the time of Adam to the time of Moses, even over those who did not sin by breaking a command, as did Adam, who was a pattern of the one to come.

The fall of man has brought him to the depths of baseness, at times man acts like an animal. That does not mean that we are animals. Saved and unsaved, we will all have to give an account to God one day, but the Bible makes no such reference of this to animals. Some false religions say that when man dies, he is reincarnated as an animal or another person. Some cults say that when a man dies, he does not exist anymore. The Holy Bible does not teach any of these false doctrines. When an animal dies, there is no after life for that creature, it just ceases to exist. However, when a human being dies, only the physical body perishes and is later resurrected to join his spirit and soul to live on for eternity in heaven or hell. For more Bible reading on the resurrection, please read: 1Corinthians Chapter 15; Philippians 3:20-21; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18.

Hebrews 9:27- Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment.

The Bible identifies three categories of death and they are as follows:

Physical Death

Adam did not immediately die physically; in fact, the Bible states that he lived nine hundred and thirty years, but the process of disease and mortality began the moment he sinned. For God said in Genesis 3:19, *“until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”*

Medical science will tell you that our physical bodies were engineered to live on indefinitely. Since cell reproduction and regeneration is a part of the human anatomy. Unfortunately, they will also tell you that our DNA has an aging component built in that prevents immortality from happening.

Physical death occurs when the spirit is separated from the body and the body returns to dust. In the Old Testament only Enoch and Elijah escaped physical death- Genesis 5:24; 2 Kings 2:11. In the New Testament, only those who are taken up in the Rapture escape physical death- 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17.

Spiritual Death

Spiritual death is separation from God. Certainly, sin separates and alienates people from God, but there is more. When Adam and Eve sinned, their spiritual natures was changed to resemble Satan’s spiritual nature. Instead of the nature of God to do right, man received the spiritual nature of the devil to do evil.

Acts 13:10

You are a child of the devil and an enemy of everything that is right! You are full of all kinds of deceit and trickery. Will you never stop perverting the right ways of the Lord?

1 John 3:10

This is how we know who the children of God are and who the children of the devil are: Anyone who does not do what is right is not a child of God; nor is anyone who does not love his brother.

John 8:44-45

You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father’s desire. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies.

Spiritual Death Is Being A Child Of The Devil!

This sinful nature did not stop with the spirit of man, but infected and corrupted the soul and mind of men and women as well.

Romans 1:28-29

Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done.

Titus 1:15-16

To the pure, all things are pure, but to those who are corrupted and do not believe, nothing is pure. In fact, both their minds and consciences are corrupted.

Sin also made its way into our physical bodies, polluting the very blood stream with this satanic sinful nature so that it would be passed on from man to his offspring- Leviticus 17:11 *“For the life of a creature is in the blood.”* Until we get a new resurrected body, this physical body we have now will always gravitate and have a propensity towards sin.

Romans 6:6

We know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin.

Romans 7:23-25

But I see another law at work in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin at work within my members. What a wretched man I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death?

Jude 22-23

Be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear--hating even the clothing stained by corrupted flesh.

This is why Jesus had said in John 3:3 that men and women must experience a spiritual re-birth, be born again in order to go to heaven. To become new creations in Christ Jesus as it is stated in 2 Corinthians 5:17. Also note in 1 Corinthians 15:50, our physical bodies cannot enter heaven because they are contaminated with sin. When sin enters God's presence, it always results in judgment.

Eternal Death

Eternal death is the condition of those who still have the spiritual nature of Satan and have departed this earthly life- having rejected the gift of eternal life through faith in Jesus- eternal separation from God!

John 8:24

Jesus said, “I told you that you would die in your sins; if you do not believe that I am [the one I claim to be], you will indeed die in your sins.”

John 3:36

Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him.”

2 Thessalonians 1:8-10

He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power.

Matthew 25:41-42- Then Jesus will say to those on his left, “Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.”

Hell, Hades or Sheol is an actual place in the center of the earth. Scientists theorize that the earth’s core is hot as it is because it is cooling down from its birth millions of years ago. Actually, it is the place for the departed dead awaiting judgment. It’s hot because that is where hell is located, a place torment.

Deuteronomy 32:22 (KJV)

For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains.

Let’s look at the natural judicial system, when we commit a crime we go to jail. A date for a court appearance is set in the future, so as to stand before the judge. Upon sentencing, we are transferred from the county jail to the state or federal penitentiary for the remainder of our time. When a person dies in their sins, they are escorted to the heart of the earth. To wait in hell for that appointed time, when they stand before God Almighty, the judge of the universe. Hell is likened to a county jail, a temporary place to await judgment.

Isaiah 14:9 (NKJV)

Hell from beneath is excited about you, to meet you at your coming; It stirs up the dead for you.

2 Peter 2:9-10

If this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the Day of Judgment, while continuing their punishment.

To illustrate the above point, let’s look at a real account recorded in the Bible. Jesus shared a real story that happened to two men- The rich man and Lazarus. This is not a parable like some think. A parable of Jesus would always typically start off as follows; Mark 4:30, “*What shall we say the kingdom of God is like, or what parable shall we use to describe it?*” Jesus would use “*Like*” or “*As*” as a comparison, also known in English grammar as a simile. In the true story concerning the rich man, and Lazarus, Luke 16:19-31, Jesus starts out by saying, “***There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day. At his gate was laid a beggar named Lazarus, covered with sores...***” These were people who had actually lived and Jesus was narrating the fate of both of them. Below, I am going to list some points I would like for us to consider:

- **The two men died physically but they went to a place in the heart of the earth. The rich man went into hell, and Lazarus went into Abraham’s bosom.**
- **One was in torment, and the other was comforted. They were even more acutely aware of their surroundings after death.**
- **The rich man could recognize Lazarus, and evidently knew it was Abraham at his side.**
- **The rich man still had his memory, and expressed emotion for his brothers who were still on the earth.**

Those who were considered righteous in the Old Testament were escorted into Abraham’s bosom which was a compartment adjacent to hell. There was no torment or anguish there. The Old Testament saints had a limited salvation or a conditional righteousness based on Abraham’s covenant. They were looking for the promised Messiah to come and pay the ransom for their salvation.

They could not enter heaven directly yet because their sin was only covered and not yet removed by the blood of Jesus. After the resurrection of Jesus, He preached the gospel to these men and women and they were born again and raised with Christ to heaven. Abraham's bosom is now empty, unfortunately hell is still being filled with people every day.

1 Peter 3:18-19

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also he went and preached to the spirits in prison.

Ephesians 4:8-10

"When he ascended on high, he led captives in his train and gave gifts to men." (What does "he ascended" mean except that he also descended to the lower, earthly regions? He who descended is the very one who ascended higher than all the heavens, in order to fill the whole universe.)

The wicked dead will have their day in court before God Almighty at the Great White Throne. Acts 24:15-16, *"I have the same hope in God as these men, that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. So I strive always to keep my conscience clear before God and man."*

Daniel 7:9-10

"As I looked, "thrones were set in place, and the Ancient of Days took his seat. His clothing was as white as snow; the hair of his head was white like wool. His throne was flaming with fire, and its wheels were all ablaze. A river of fire was flowing, coming out from before him. Thousands upon thousands attended him; ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. The court was seated, and the books were opened.

Revelation 20:11-15

Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. Earth and sky fled from his presence, and there was no place for them. And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what he had done. Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

The lake of fire is not the same place as hell, because death and hell will be cast into this lake of fire. God rids the universe of all rebellious spirit beings: human, fallen angels, evil spirits and Satan himself. So, the Lake of Fire will be their final destination or penitentiary for all eternity. After the resurrection of Jesus from the dead 2,000 years ago, whenever those who were born again experience physical death, they are immediately ushered into heaven. We don't go down to Abraham's bosom anymore. Jesus has obtained an eternal redemption for us, the penalty of sin is paid in full so we are at last reunited with God in His very presence in heaven.

2 Corinthians 5:8-10

We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord. So we make it our goal to please him, whether we are at home in the body or away from it. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.

Philippians 1:20-24

I eagerly expect and hope that I will in no way be ashamed, but will have sufficient courage so that now as always Christ will be exalted in my body, whether by life or by death. For to me, to live is Christ and to die is gain. If I am to go on living in the body, this will mean fruitful labor for me. Yet what shall I choose? I do not know! I am torn between the two: I desire to depart and be with Christ, which is better by far; but it is more necessary for you that I remain in the body.

In the midst of God pronouncing judgment in the Garden after Adam and Eve's transgression, a promise was made that would change the destiny of mankind and undo what Satan had just done in the Garden.

Genesis 3:15

"And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel."

The seed of the woman, meaning a man born of woman would crush Satan's authority and release mankind from the slavery of sin and death. In other words, it would bring about the eventual doom of Satan.

Revelation 1:18

I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades.

Hebrews 2:14-15

Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death-that is, the devil- and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.

Colossians 2:15

And having disarmed the powers and authorities, he made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them by the cross.

However, in the process of crushing Satan's dominion, Satan will have the opportunity to inflict pain and suffering on Jesus via the beatings and crucifixion- Please read all of Isaiah 53 for details!

Through the fulfillment of the promised offspring or seed of the woman, Jesus Christ, Adam's lost dominion has been restored. Through Jesus Christ we are more than conquerors and can reign in this life over Satan and the effects of death and sin- Romans 8:37. If the rapture does not take place in our life time, our bodies will experience physical death, but only after we have been satisfied with long life and enjoyed God's salvation all the days of our lives- Psalm 91:16.

Romans 5:17

For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God's abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.

The effect of the fall of man is still seen in creation today, and the misery on this earth due to Satan being the god of this world. However, the good news is that Satan is not my god any more, Jesus is and I can enjoy abundant life here and now while I run my course on this earth with joy!

Romans 8:18-23

I consider that our present sufferings are not worth comparing with the glory that will be revealed in us. The creation waits in eager expectation for the sons of God to be revealed. For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God. We know that the whole creation has been groaning as in the pains of childbirth right up to the present time.

Isaiah 65:17-18

“Behold, I will create new heavens and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind. But be glad and rejoice forever in what I will create.”

Revelation 21:1-5

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea. I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, “Now the dwelling of God is with men, and he will live with them. They will be his people, and God himself will be with them and be their God. He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away.” He who was seated on the throne said, “I am making everything new!” Then he said, “Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true.”

Wow, the future looks so wonderful, it is beyond description or comprehension. But meanwhile back at the ranch in the Garden of Eden, we have Adam and Eve not sure what to do now. The first animals are sacrificed on behalf of fallen man, and there will be many more until Jesus comes and makes the one and final sacrifice for sin. Skins of these animals were put on Adam and Eve as a covering for their apparent nakedness. Formerly they had been robed in the light of God’s glory as their covering.

Genesis 3:21-22

The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.

Formerly in Genesis 1:29, Adam and Eve were vegetarians, and so was the rest of the animal kingdom. However, with death in the earth, the wild animals became carnivores and so did man. But during the Millennium, these carnivores will revert back to a diet of grass- Isaiah 11:7; 65:25. Now that Adam and Eve had taken on Satan’s spiritual nature of death, God did not want this spiritual state to become permanent. Thus He denied them access to the Tree of Life; that would have bound them into a hopeless eternal sinful condition with no chance of salvation.

And the LORD God said, “The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever.” So the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken. After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.

Genesis 3:22-24



Unit 1 Review:

What makes us unique amongst God's creation on the earth?

What are the implications of God giving dominion over His Earthly creation?

Mankind was endowed with a free-will, why is this significant?

What are the ramifications of Adam and Eve listening to Satan and taking the fatal bite?

What does "Death" mean and what are the three forms of death?

Why couldn't Old Testament saints go directly to heaven when they died?

6. The Origin of Satan

There was an Arch-Angel at one time named Lucifer- an Arch-Angel is a high ranking angel. Isaiah 14:12-17 (KJV), *“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!”* He had authority given to him upon this earth, a throne over the nations of that time. He had dominion given to him, just as God had given dominion to Adam and Eve in Genesis 1:28.

Isaiah 14:12-15

You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low the nations! You said in your heart, “I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain. I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.” But you are brought down to the grave, to the depths of the pit.

Notice that he said, *“I will raise my throne above the stars of God...”* his throne being on this planet, and the *“stars of God”* being the other angels. Here we have an account of the original Star Wars! Lucifer’s rebellion along with 1/3 of the other angelic host, raised arms against God’s authority; a feeble attempt to de-throne God in a coup. Revelation 12:4- *“His (Satan) tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth.”*

Ezekiel chapter 28:11-19 is another significant passage that speaks of Satan’s rebellion. At that time, the Pre-Adamite earth was referred to as “Eden, the garden of God.” When Satan was in the Garden of Eden, he was already a fallen creature. However, before his fall he apparently had dominion on this earth given to him by God over the nations of that time- before our time.

Ezekiel 28:12

You were the model of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in **Eden, the garden of God.**

Lucifer was originally created a perfect angelic being, but unfortunately it all went to his head and was lifted up in pride. Notice the reference to “kings” on the earth, again this is before Adam and Eve. To have kings, there must have been kingdoms, nations, peoples, cultures etc. Another race of beings other than angels had inhabited this earth. Jesus as the “Word of God” before His incarnation into earth witnessed Satan’s defeat and crushed rebellion- Luke 10:18-19, *“Jesus replied, ‘I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven.’”*

Ezekiel 28:15, 17

You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you. Your heart became proud on account of your beauty, and you corrupted your wisdom because of your splendor. So I threw you to the earth; I made a spectacle of you before kings.

1 Timothy 3:6-7

He must not be a recent convert, or he may become conceited and fall under the same judgment as the devil.

God destroys Lucifer’s kingdom on earth completely by destroying every created thing, inhabitants and all vegetation. He then turns the earth upside down so-to-speak and by means of a great flood makes it empty and waste- formless and void. The length of this Pre-Adamite flood on the earth is unknown, but it was devastating!

Jeremiah 4:23-26

I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, and their light was gone. I looked at the mountains, and they were quaking; all the hills were swaying. I looked, and there were no people; every bird in the sky had flown away. I looked, and the fruitful land was a desert; all its towns lay in ruins before the LORD, before his fierce anger.

Genesis 1:1-2

Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.

We cannot say exactly how old the earth is because we do not know when the beginning was. God’s creation of the heavens and the earth in the beginning as stated in Genesis 1:1 could have been millions and billions of years ago. If geologists can prove the age of the earth to be what they claim, we have no scriptural authority to disagree. They cannot contradict the Bible, for it does not reveal any time element in connection with the earth’s original creation.

I’m not presenting this dogmatically, because we don’t have enough light on this from the Scriptures to be dogmatic. However, we do get a glimpse here and there, so we do have something to work with concerning the time before ours.

This much is certain, according to Scripture, the earth is more than 6,000 years old and there were inhabitants on the earth before the days of Adam.

Mankind on the Earth – Adam was created around 6,000 years ago!

The genealogies of Luke 3:23-38 describes the godly line from Adam to Jesus.

A generation is calculated to be around 40 years- Numbers 32:13

Matthew 1:17 describes 42 generations from Abraham to Jesus-	1,680 years
Genesis chapter 5 describes the generations from Adam to Noah-	2,242 years (Septuagint)
From Jesus until today-	<u>2,000</u> years
	5,922

This explains why geologists have found fossil records dating so old by carbon dating. These creatures belonged to the Pre-Adamite age millions of years ago. Besides dinosaurs, these fossils depict ape-like Neanderthals with primitive tools they had used as hunters and gatherers. The Bible does not have a lot to say about what happened between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2.

The earth was cursed and flooded according to Genesis 1:2 because of sin, before the 6 days of re-creation in Genesis 1:3 - 2:25. Lucifer was already a fallen creature when he came into Adam’s Garden of Eden, having already ruled the earth, rebelled and caused the first flood. The word “**was**” in Genesis 1:2 would be better translated in the Hebrew ‘hayah’ as “**became**.” So this verse should read, “Now the earth became formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep...” because of rebellion and the resulting judgment. The obscuring of the sun and consequent darkness are always the result of judgment in the Bible- Joel 2:31.

7. The Kingdom of Darkness

2 Corinthians 2:11 AMP

To keep Satan from getting the advantage over us; for we are not ignorant of his wiles and intentions.

As stated in the above Scripture, our goal from this teaching material, is for the believer to be made aware of Satan's nature, schemes and operations; so he can't take advantage of our ignorance of him. Satan prefers anonymity, if he can deceive people into thinking he does not exist, than no one will oppose him- he can operate in this world with impunity. Through the light of God's Word we are going to expose a number of his dark secrets so we can put him in his place, under our FEET in a place of defeat.

The Nature of the Beast

In regards to nature, purpose and tactics, when we describe Satan we are also describing how his entire kingdom operates- fallen angels, demons, the works! Certainly there are different levels of evil and wickedness (Luke 11:26) within the kingdom of darkness, but in a nut shell they are all united with the same goal in mind- oppose everything that is of God! Names in the Bible describe the identity of the individual, their nature and character:

- Lucifer- (Used Once)- Morning Star- *his name given him by God before his fall*
- Satan - (Used 56 times)- The Adversary
- Devil- (Used 33 times)- The Accuser and Slanderer

Serpent- Deceitfulness(2 Corinthians 11:3), **Dragon**- powerful(Revelation 20:2), **Beelzebub**- Prince of the demons(Matthew 10:25), **Tempter**- Seduction to sin(1 Thessalonians 3:5), **Wicked, Evil or Lawless One**- Speaks of his character(Matthew 13:19), **Prince of this World**- His rule and influence(John 16:11), **Prince of the Power of the Air**- Darkness ruling, earth's atmosphere(Ephesians 2:2), **god of this World**- Rules world system(2 Corinthians 4:4), **Deceiver**- It's what he does(Revelation 20:10), **Accuser**- Ceaseless contesting(Revelation 12:10), **Angel of Light**- Deceptive(2 Corinthians 11:13-15), **Murderer**- Source and instigator of death(John 8:44), **Father of Lies**- All he does(John 8:44), **Roaring Lion**- Fierceness to devour(1 Peter 5:8), **Destroyer**- Handiwork(Revelation 9:11).

It is vital that we understand that Satan incarnates all that is evil and wicked in this world, he is the reason and the source. His very person embodies death in all its forms and expression of sickness, disease, hate, murder, lying, cheating, etc. The Bible talks about the "Curse of the Law", the consequences of not keeping the covenant law or commandments in Deuteronomy 28:15-68. The devil lives to inflict people with these curses, looking for opportunities, seeking whom he may devour, watching, waiting- it's what he does. God allows it when people get into sin, but He is not the author or creator of it. It is Satan who manufactures, creates and distributes all that is bad and evil in this earth- HIV, Cancer, Homosexuality, Gossip, you name it, if it's bad it came from the devil. Tornadoes, hurricanes and floods are not an "Act of God" but the result of sin in this world. It is imperative that we get our facts straight in this matter according to 2 Corinthians 2:11, lest Satan takes advantage of us! Satan is the father of the sinful nature, simply read the description of it in Galatians 5:19-21; it's the same nature within all his children- unsaved folks according to 1 John 3:7-10.

John 10:10 AMP

The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).

Satan's Hierarchy

Ephesians chapter 6 gives us some insight into the hierarchy within the kingdom of darkness. Obviously Satan has placed himself at the top of the food chain. Beneath him are fallen angels, referred to in one translation of Ephesians 6:12 as "Wicked spirits" that have regional or territorial authority. Daniel 10:13, 20-21 is an account of Gabriel and Michael, elect Arch-Angels of God engaged in spiritual warfare with the prince of Persia and the prince of Greece, fallen angels. The highest class of demonic authority are "world rulers" and then "powers" and finally "principalities." Leadership begins and is exercised from the top down, giving orders to the others in order to do their bidding.

Ephesians 6:10-12 AMP

In conclusion, be strong in the Lord [be empowered through your union with Him]; draw your strength from Him [that strength which His boundless might provides]. Put on God's whole armor [the armor of a heavy-armed soldier which God supplies], that you may be able successfully to stand up against [all] the strategies and the deceits of the devil. For we are not wrestling with flesh and blood [contending only with physical opponents], but against the despotisms, against the powers, against [the master spirits who are] the world rulers of this present darkness, against the spirit forces of wickedness in the heavenly (supernatural) sphere.

Within Satan's kingdom, there are demonic spirits that specialize in various vices, diseases, witchcraft, etc. They have had thousands of years to practice their evil deeds upon humans throughout the centuries. Remember according to John 10:10, Satan's agenda is simply to kill, steal and destroy, let's look at some of his agents whose goals are these aims:

- A spirit of infirmity- Peddling in sickness and disease, creating suffering, misery and death

Luke 13:11-12, 16 NKJV

And behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bent over and could in no way raise herself up... "So ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound — think of it — for eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath?"

Acts 10:38 AMP

How God anointed and consecrated Jesus of Nazareth with the [Holy] Spirit and with strength and ability and power; how He went about doing good and, in particular, curing all who were harassed and oppressed by [the power of] the devil, for God was with Him.

- Familiar spirits- These demonic spirits are familiar with people's lives and reveal facts about them.

Leviticus 19:31 NKJV

Give no regard to mediums and familiar spirits; do not seek after them, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God.

- Unclean spirits- In the Greek it refers to moral lewdness, particularly sexual sins

Mark 1:23 NKJV

Now there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit.

This is not at all an exhaustive list, but for the scope of this study we have enclosed a few classifications- don't forget religious spirits in 1 Timothy 4:1.

The World System

Satan is referred to in Ephesians 2:2-3 as, *“The ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.”* His activities include the ceaseless manipulations of the minds of men, like puppets on a string to do his will. Ignorantly, multitudes have been taken captive to do his will- 2 Timothy 2:26. In 2 Thessalonians 2:7, the devil is referred to as, *“The secret power of lawlessness is already at work...”* He uses the Media, Hollywood, Political, Religious, Education and anything else he can get his hands on to push his rebellious agenda against God. His appeal is to the physical and mental realms- lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life.

1 John 2:15-17 NKJV

Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world — the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life — is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

2 Corinthians 4:4-5

The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

1 John 5:19

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.

The Scriptures are very clear about not subscribing to the world system because it is under Satan’s control. We must avoid being unequally associated with unbelievers as our close friends- 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1; Romans 12:1-2. God does not want his children contaminated, corrupted and perverted by the world. His will is that we keep ourselves pure and not share in the sins of others, to avoid the very appearance of evil- 1 Timothy 5:22; 2 Timothy 2:22. The world system, under Satan’s control has one primary agenda, to keep us from God, particularly Jesus. So, to overcome the world is to believe on Jesus Christ and stand on His Word in our lives!

1 John 5:3-5

This is love for God: to obey his commands. And his commands are not burdensome, for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith. Who is it that overcomes the world? Only he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

Tactics, Devices and Operations

Trials, Tests and Temptations come from the enemy in an attempt to derail our faith in God. In other words, to make life so difficult through persecutions and attacks that we would abandon our faith and turn our backs on God. Only through acting on God’s Word, the ministry of the Spirit and fellowship with other believers will we overcome and develop godly perseverance. Chapters 2 & 3 of the Book of Revelation, reveals the trials of the early church and the rewards for not quitting or giving up- also read Hebrews 10:32-39; James 1:2-18; 1 Peter 4:1-5, 12-19.

2 Timothy 3:12

In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted.

Concerning this very thing, in the case of Paul, a demonic spirit was assigned to him as a thorn in his flesh to stir up persecution for him; everywhere he went according to 2 Corinthians 12:7-10. However, through God's grace (God's power at work in those who believe), what the devil meant for evil, God turned around for good- Romans 8:28

God does not want us to get into fear concerning the devil, who is powerful and clever, but is also a defeated foe thanks to Jesus. It is a fact according to the Scriptures that demon possession and oppression is very real and can be reversed through the Name of Jesus. Only unbelievers, Non-Christians can be totally possessed, spirit, soul and body- Mark 5:1-17; Acts 16:16-18; 19:13-20.

However, demonic possession does not happen without the individual opening the door through some means that allows open access. For instance, those who play with Ouija boards, tarot cards, take hallucinate drugs, even unforgiveness, opens wide the door for demonic activity in a person's life. The spirit realm is more real than the natural realm we can experience with our five senses. Sin in general, provides a portal for the enemy to operate in the affairs of men; some sins leading to greater tragedy.

Deuteronomy 18:10-11

Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead.

Christians can be oppressed in their bodies or minds by the demonic if they allow them to. So let's look at a few ways that the enemy gets into folks lives so we can be sure to keep those doors shut.

2 Corinthians 10:3-6

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

Sin Opens Doors: As it pertains to Christians, demonic spirits find open doors in our lives when we yield to the sinful nature (Galatians 5:19-21) in our bodies. If we persist in sin without repenting (1 John 1:9), Satan has a legal right to attack our lives. The enemy will seek to energize the sinful passions in our bodies (James 1:13-15) to entice us to sin, for the purpose of opening doors to the demonic.

Ephesians 4:26-27 AMP

When angry, do not sin; do not ever let your wrath (your exasperation, your fury or indignation) last until the sun goes down. Leave no [such] room or foothold for the devil [give no opportunity to him].

Ignorance Opens Doors: 2 Corinthians 2:11 states very clearly that ignorance of Satan's schemes will inadvertently provide an avenue for the enemy to take advantage of us. The "Truth" of God's Word is what makes us free and exposes the lies of the devil- Please Read Hosea 4:6.

Fear, Doubt and Unbelief Opens Doors: Giving into these temptations, can empower the enemy over our lives. Satan will produce lying symptoms in our bodies and deceptive circumstances in our lives in an attempt to lure us into believing a lie over the truth of God's Word. Remember, it's not a sin to be tempted, just to give into it- Mark 8:26; James 1:6-8; Hebrews 3:16-19. Circumstances in life are real, God's Word has the final say, a greater reality that trumps the lies of the enemy.

8. Trials, Tests & Temptations

It is critical for the believer to know the source of Good and Evil. Let's examine the notion that God hurts and afflicts us for our good, as a form of discipline. This is an important question, so in what manner does God discipline His children. Our friend Job has provided much fodder for religious folks to support their erroneous ideas concerning God's methods in these matters. Remember, inspiration assures that what was said was accurately recorded in the Bible, but does not necessary endorse it. We must consider the source and the context of the passage. From Job's perspective everything came from God, the good, the bad and the ugly. Thank God for the New Testament that sets the record straight as to who is the author of what according to John 10:10 and Acts 10:38. Jesus is like the guy with the white hat, the good guy!

Job 5:17-18

Blessed is the man whom God corrects; so do not despise the discipline of the Almighty. For he wounds, but he also binds up; he injures, but his hands also heal.

In John 8:31-32, Jesus declares that it is the knowledge of the truth that sets us free. We can't believe any further than the revelation we have of God's Word that is why the Holy Spirit through the apostle Paul instructs us to let the Word of Christ dwell in us richly in Colossians 3:16. In Hebrews 11:6, we discover that "Faith" is what pleases God, so He will always direct us to have faith in Him through His Word.

So if God is interested that our faith grows, what causes that to happen. Romans 10:17 says that faith comes by hearing the Word and in James 2:26, faith without deeds is dead. So our faith grows as we hear God's Word, believe it in our heart and act on it or it into practice in our lives. Occasions to act on the Word confront us daily in all kinds of situations; having opportunities to say, "It is written" to the circumstances of life. This is how our faith grows.

Get this, a person can have 10 miles of trials and not grow an inch unless they stand on God's Word in the midst of those trials, otherwise they just become another victim or statistic. What I am trying to say is that there is nothing virtuous in a trial, test or temptation since they come from the devil to kill us, steal from us and destroy our lives- they are enemies and should be resisted with the Word! Now in spite of what the devil meant for evil, certainly God can turn around for our good. Only if we walk by faith in God's Word, otherwise we will be ripped off, God does not get the glory when we get victimized.

Romans 8:28

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose.

So is God the author and sender of trials, tests and temptations?

There has been an undercurrent in religious circles which says that trials, tests and temptations we have in our life are designed by God to make us stronger. In other words don't fight it, allow it to run its course in our lives to the extent that we experience the full brunt of spiritual suffering, so that in the end we will come out of the fire as pure as gold- sound familiar? So who is so really interested in the testing of our faith, to see whether it is genuine or not- God or the devil?

Tests:

Luke 22:31-32 AMP

Simon, Simon (Peter), listen! Satan has asked excessively that [all of] you be given up to him [out of the power and keeping of God], that he might sift [all of] you like grain. But I have prayed especially for you [Peter], that your [own] **faith may not fail; and when you yourself have turned again, strengthen and establish your brethren.**

The Greek for “he may sift”: peirazo (pi-rad’-zo); from NT:3984; to test (objectively), i.e. endeavor, scrutinize, entice, discipline: Intensive, “To ask, interrogate, inquire of, consult, or to demand of a person”

Ultimately every Test boils down to a test of obedience- to obey God’s Word or not, it’s a Faith Test! So, do we really believe what we say we do; especially when it really counts? Somebody wants to know and it’s not God. From Satan’s perspective let’s look at the reason behind “sifting as wheat.” To sift as wheat is the act of separating or boiling down in order to find out what we are made of. In other words, the devil wants to know if we really are what we say we are, he wants to test our claim to be a faithful follower of Jesus Christ. His hope is that we will be proved false, a fake and discredit our testimony and make us irrelevant. So in reality these tests come from Satan, not from God. Satan is the accuser of the brethren, and he is looking for dirt on you and me- Revelation 12:10. So tests confront us with a choice to obey or not to obey, as a result of the situation or circumstance.

Revelation 2:10

Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you the crown of life.

Trials:

So what about 1 Peter 1:6-7, it almost sounds like God sends trials our way to make us strong. Or James chapter 1, we are told to count it all joy when we face trials of many kinds. The New Testament makes it clear that these trials are spiritual attacks from Satan with the express purpose to shipwreck and destroy our faith- they come primarily in the form of hardships, persecution and adversity in life. Satan is after our faith in God’s Word according to Mark 4:14. Trials are not our friend, we should not embrace it, glamorize it or coddle up with it and lay down and let the enemy run rough shod over us. We are to resist trials tests and temptations with the Word because they come from the devil- James 4:7; 1 Peter 5:9.

1 Peter 1:6-7 AMP

[You should] be exceedingly glad on this account, though now for a little while you may be distressed by trials and suffer temptations, So that [the genuineness] of your faith may be tested, [your faith] which is infinitely more precious than the perishable gold which is tested and purified by fire. [This proving of your faith is intended] to rebound to [your] praise and glory and honor when Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One) is revealed.

James 1:2-4 AMP

Consider it wholly joyful, my brethren, whenever you are enveloped in or encounter trials of any sort or fall into various temptations. Be assured and understand that the trial and proving of your faith bring out endurance and steadfastness and patience. But let endurance and steadfastness and patience have full play and do a thorough work, so that you may be [people] perfectly and fully developed [with no defects], lacking in nothing.

1 Thessalonians 3:2-4

We sent Timothy, who is our brother and God's fellow worker in spreading the gospel of Christ, to strengthen and encourage you in your faith, so that no one would be unsettled by these trials. You know quite well that we were destined for them. In fact, when we were with you, we kept telling you that we would be persecuted. And it turned out that way, as you well know.

The more we walk with God, the more intense the attacks from the enemy will be, but it's not God sending them. We don't thank God for trials in our lives, but are told to give thanks to God in the midst of them. Our attitude should be as a fighter, as more than a conqueror, victorious, triumphant and strong in the Lord and in the power of His Might- Romans 8:37; 1 Corinthians 15:57; 2 Corinthians 2:14; Ephesians 6:10.

We don't thank God for trials but in spite of them, it's another opportunity to prove God's Word is true and put the devil under our feet through faith in God's Word. There are a lot of benefits to be had at what the devil throws at us. Our faith grows, we develop character and perseverance, but only if we overcome, otherwise we run the risk of becoming another victim and embittered causality.

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18- Be joyful always; pray continually; give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus.

John 16:33-17:1 AMP

I have told you these things, so that in Me you may have [perfect] peace and confidence. In the world you have tribulation and trials and distress and frustration; but be of good cheer [take courage; be confident, certain, undaunted]! For I have overcome the world. [I have deprived it of power to harm you and have conquered it for you.]

2 Timothy 3:12-13

In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted, while evil men and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived.

Dear friends, there is no guarantee that we are going to be made strong by trials unless we pass the test and overcome the trial through faith in God's Word. What about those unfortunate Christians who succumbed to the pressure and backslid and turned away from God- 1 Timothy 5:15, "*Some have in fact already turned away to follow Satan.*" No one seems to mention these risks or talk about them do they?

Mark 4:16-17 AMP

And in the same way the ones sown upon stony ground are those who, when they hear the Word, at once receive and accept and welcome it with joy; And they have no real root in themselves, and so they endure for a little while; then when **trouble or persecution arises on account of the Word, they immediately are offended (become displeased, indignant, resentful) and they stumble and fall away.**

So when it comes to trials, what the devil meant for harm and evil, God will turn around, salvage and work some good out of it; but only if we respond in faith to God's Word in the midst of the trial and persevere.

James 1:12

Blessed is the man **who perseveres under trial, because when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of life that God has promised to those who love him.**

Temptations:

For new Christians who are reading this, this teaching probably makes a lot of common sense. Fortunately for new believers in Jesus, they have not had their minds filled with religious inaccuracies concerning these matters, so they are not confused in this area. This teaching is meant to clarify and set the record straight for those who have been misinformed and confused by religious ideology.

If knowledge of the truth sets us free, then the doctrines of demons holds people in bondage. Now onto the subject of temptation, so who is the tempter? Well it comes down to the devil and the sinful impulses of our physical bodies called the flesh.

1 Thessalonians 3:5

For this reason, when I could stand it no longer, I sent to find out about your faith. I was afraid that in some way the tempter might have tempted you and our efforts might have been useless.

James 1:13-15

When tempted, no one should say, “God is tempting me.” For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death.

After using the word temptation in the sense of a trial, James now uses it as a solicitation to sin. That’s right, a test or trial by nature is an enticement or temptation to turn on God and doubt His Word! While a trial infers external difficulties, temptations refer to internal impulses for the enticement to sin.

I want to point out something very important. After the Holy Spirit through James describes trials, tests and temptations in the majority of the first chapter, he makes a huge clarification and distinction to make sure no one confuses God with having anything to do with trials, tests and temptations by saying:

James 1:16-18

Don’t be deceived, my dear brothers. Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows. He chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of first fruits of all he created.

Isn’t it interesting that he says, “Don’t be deceived” my dear brothers. Deceived about what you may ask- that trials, tests and temptations come from God. Since every good and perfect gift comes from the God who does not change in this matter. With Him there are no exceptions, He is a good God and is the author of only good gifts.

Matthew 7:9-11

“Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

Biblical Discipline

Some have said that, “Every bad thing that happens to you in life is also God’s will for you. That’s God’s way of disciplining you.” If that were true, there would be no need to resist the devil. So if the Lord does not discipline us with trials, tests and temptations, how does He do it then? When we look at Hebrews 12:5 through verse 11, we see a parallel being made between earthly fathers and the heavenly Father disciplining their children.

Hebrews 12:5 AMP

And have you [completely] forgotten the divine word of appeal and encouragement in which you are reasoned with and addressed as sons? My son, do not think lightly or scorn to submit to the correction and discipline of the Lord, nor lose courage and give up and faint when you are reproved or corrected by Him.

So if a Christian dad has to discipline his children for wrong doing, does he break his/her arm, or deprive them of food and water. Perhaps for serious offenses he would put cancer on his kids or subject them to a serious car accident in order to teach them some deep spiritual lesson in humility. I am being a little sarcastic here, the answer is obviously no way. Jesus said in Matthew 7:9-11, if you as earthly parents would not do such things to your children, and are evil in comparison with God, our heavenly Father would never do evil things to us either- to infer otherwise in dangerous and unbiblical. God disciplines us with His Word, that is how we are corrected and trained not with tragedy! Just look at what Jesus said in Revelation 3:19, *“Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent.”* A “Rebuke” refers to the utterance of words, right?

Hebrews 12:7 AMP

You must submit to and endure [correction] for discipline; God is dealing with you as with sons. For what son is there whom his father does not [thus] train and correct and discipline?

Proverbs 3:11-12

My son, do not despise the Lord’s discipline and do not resent his **rebuke, because the Lord disciplines those he loves, as a father the son he delights in.**

2 Timothy 4:2

Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, **rebuke and encourage — with great patience and careful instruction.**

2 Timothy 3:16-17

All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, **rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.**

The word “chasten” or “discipline” means to child train. We are called disciples of Christ which means those who are trained or under the tutelage of Jesus Christ in a discipline (area of study). Here is the key to rightly dividing what it means to be disciplined by the Lord- discipline is spiritual training. Hebrews 12:5 is not inferring that God is sending some calamity our way to teach us. That would be child abuse, not child training. But yet, some say “God sends sickness to discipline his children.” If God was going to give sickness, He would have to steal it first. God does not have any of it, nor is He the author or creator of it and you won’t find any of it in heaven either. It’s a mystery to me why some people, when they get religious, lose all their common sense and quit thinking.

Consider Ephesians 6:4, *“Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the **training** and instruction of the Lord.”* The word “training” is the same Greek word as “discipline” in Hebrews 12:5.

paideia (pahee-di’-ah); tutorage, i.e. education or training; by implication, disciplinary correction: KJV - chastening, chastisement, instruction, nurture.

Psalms 94:12- Blessed is the man you discipline, O Lord, the man you teach from your law.

To nurture a child is quite different from some of our preconceived ideas of discipline. Most people when they think of the Lord disciplining them, unfortunately think of God doing them harm. However, Biblical discipline in Ephesians 6:4 and Hebrews 12 are in the sense of nurturing. In 2 Timothy 3:16 concerning God's Word is useful for "training" is the same Greek word as discipline in Hebrews 12:5.

What some people call God's discipline upon His children is really child abuse in a cruel way! We can see how religious tradition has crept in and has driven these wedges into our thinking, until we believe that God is carrying out all kinds of calamity and trouble upon His children. Tornadoes, hurricanes and floods are not acts of God- no these are the acts of the devil not God! Now that's a sacred cow that needs to be kicked over. I know of dear Christians who have been wracked with cancer thinking God allowed it in their lives to teach them something or be glorified through their suffering- nothing could be further from the truth of God's Word!

If anything comes near to being a doctrine of the devil, it is the idea that God is making us sick and God is causing us troubles. God and the devil have never changed places, regardless of what anyone says. God is still a good God, and the devil is still a bad devil. The devil is not perfecting the church that is done through the washing of the water of the Word according to Ephesians 5:25-26. Remember, Satan is the god of this world according to 2 Corinthians 4:4, so God allows the devil to operate. But thanks be to God through the redemptive work of Jesus Christ, we don't have to allow the devil to work in our lives- we can resist him and he will flee from us!

2 Peter 3:15-16

Bear in mind that our Lord's patience means salvation, just as our dear brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom that God gave him. He writes the same way in all his letters, speaking in them of these matters. His letters contain some things that are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.

1 Timothy 4:1

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons.

Paul's Thorn in the Flesh

Someone so aptly stated that deception wouldn't be so deceiving if it wasn't so deceptive. Paul's thorn in the flesh is a deceptive religious tradition that holds many in bondage. Religious ideas about Paul's thorn have caused so many to suffer needlessly, believing they were pleasing God. Many people subscribe to the notion that God gave Paul some kind of illness in order to keep him humble. Paul's thorn has been espoused to be anything from sore eyeballs to ingrown toenails.

In 2 Corinthians 11:16-33, Paul in defense to his credibility under attack by false apostles goes into great detail about suffering persecution, trials, tests, temptations and hardships for the sake of the gospel. Such hardships as beatings, ship wrecks and all kinds of dangers; he was even stoned to death and raised back from the dead. Please keep this all in mind because it is crucial to understanding what Paul's thorn was. After this lengthy description, we begin chapter twelve of second Corinthians and he begins talking about himself having visions and revelations and even going to heaven to see God.

Paul's thorn was not sickness and disease

Now if Satan is the god of this world and his kingdom of darkness is all about keeping people from the saving knowledge of Jesus Christ, I wonder if he may have felt threatened by all of Paul's achievements in preaching the gospel all over the ancient world. I wonder if he may have said to himself, "Satan, you need to do something about this Paul fellow, he is getting too many people saved. I know, I'll assign one of my most devious of demons to his case to stir up trouble wherever he goes. This demon will make life so difficult for Paul, stirring up so much persecution, that he will give up and quit the ministry!"

2 Corinthians 12:7-8

To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me.

Here we have it, Paul's thorn in the flesh was a "messenger of Satan" to torment or make life miserable for Paul. The word "torment" used here means to buffet, to strike with a clenched fist or open hand. In other words it was a steady buffeting, in an attempt to keep the revelation of the gospel from being preached. In Genesis, God foretold that Jesus would come to the earth and crush Satan's dominion but in the process the devil would "strike his heel" or make him suffer for it through the crucifixion- Genesis 3:15. In other words when it comes to ministry, there is a price to be paid called persecution, we are told to pick up our cross and follow Jesus in spite of it- Mark 8:34.

The devil is not going to stand idly by while we contribute to the advancement of God's Kingdom in the earth. The enemy is going to stir up persecution, even by religious well-meaning Christian folks. That is why Paul said in Philippians 3:14, "*I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus*" and 2 Timothy 2:3, "*Endure hardship with us like a good soldier of Christ Jesus.*" No one said serving Jesus would be a cake walk, the enemy will try to make it as difficult as possible. Since Paul was so prominent in the ministry, he was a target and received "special" treatment from the enemy- 2 Timothy 4:14-15; Acts 13:50; 17:5; 20:19

Acts 14:2, 5, 19-20

But the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles and poisoned their minds against the brothers. There was a plot afoot among the Gentiles and Jews, together with their leaders, to mistreat them and stone them. Then some Jews came from Antioch and Iconium and won the crowd over. They stoned Paul and dragged him outside the city, thinking he was dead. But after the disciples had gathered around him, he got up and went back into the city.

Since Paul's thorn was not sickness but an evil spirit, Jesus was telling Paul that he had to resist the devil. It was a matter of Paul acting on the authority of God's Word to defeat the purpose of the messenger of Satan according to James 4:7. James didn't say that the devil would flee from God, for it was not God's responsibility to resist him. But the devil will flee from us who are here on earth. So if Paul didn't resist this messenger of the devil in Jesus' Name, then God wouldn't. Let us say it another way, God couldn't if Paul didn't. Jesus couldn't do a thing about it, if Paul didn't act on the authority of God's Word.

2 Corinthians 12:8-9

Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness."

Clearly God did not give the thorn to Paul in order to keep him humble! The Lord was saying to Paul, use the grace I have given you and resist the devil and trample him under foot- Luke 10:18-20.

Some have thought that Paul had too much pride because of the revelations. So God gave him a thorn in the flesh to keep him humble. I don't believe you can find in the New Testament any evidence that God had anything to do with giving Paul a thorn in the flesh. God does not give His ministers a revelation of His Word and then hinder them from preaching it.

Concerning verse 7, *"To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations..."* is referring to the fact, that if it had not been for the messenger of Satan assigned against Paul to stir up trouble, everywhere he preached, Paul would have been exalted to the point that he could have influenced the known world with this revelation of the gospel. But he was not able to preach it freely without a fight of faith, for Satan was hindering him at every turn.

1 Thessalonians 2:18

For we wanted to come to you — certainly I, Paul, did, again and again — but Satan stopped us.

It is amazing that so many religious people say Paul's thorn was something other than a messenger of Satan when in the same verse that Paul mentioned it, he plainly stated what the thorn was. Even common sense would tell you God did not send the messenger of the devil to torment Paul and give him a hard time. Paul's statement concerning a "messenger of Satan" in the Interlinear Greek-English New Testament states it this way, "that me he might buffet." A personal pronoun is used here in the Greek text. That tells us it was not sickness.

Suffering According to the Will of God

A side point I would like to briefly explore with you, a sacred cow concerning misinformed folks who think succumbing to sickness is a means of suffering for Jesus. We know that healing is part of the atonement. Consider Isaiah chapter 53, in the same context concerning Jesus being pierced for our transgressions, we are also healed- for by His stripes we are healed in verse 5.

In verse 4 Jesus took up our sicknesses and carried our pains- also stated in Matthew 8:17 after Jesus had healed people in their bodies. So this is not talking about spiritual healing but specifically physical healing.

All evangelical Christians have a firm understanding that Jesus took care of all our sins through His death, burial and resurrection. So it would be unscriptural for us as Christians today to think we still need to suffer the penalty of sin, which Jesus already did on our behalf 2,000 years ago right? If I sin today, I stand on the promise of 1 John 1:9, without any need to do penance- to pay or suffer for my sin.

If healing is just as much a part of our redemption and atonement as the forgiveness of sins, what makes us think that we should suffer sickness and disease when Jesus had carried it for us and paid the price for our healing 2,000 years ago? To suffer for something that Jesus had suffered for as our substitute is unbiblical and would be receiving God's grace in vain for our lives- 2 Corinthians 6:1. Nor is suffering for doing wrong considered suffering for Jesus- 1 Peter 2:19-20. So let's look at true Biblical suffering briefly.

Suffering in the Body

The greatest form of Biblical suffering comes from bringing our bodies under subjection. Until our bodies are redeemed, we have to continually contend with the sinful nature in our physical bodies. We can always get away from people who are giving us a hard time, but we can't run away from our own physical body- it goes where we go

1 Peter 4:1-3

Therefore, since Christ suffered in his body, arm yourselves also with the same attitude, because he who has suffered in his body is done with sin. As a result, he does not live the rest of his earthly life for evil human desires, but rather for the will of God.

Suffering Persecution

Nowhere in the New Testament will we find a Scripture that supports the notion that suffering from sickness is suffering for Jesus. In fact Jesus came to deliver us from the oppression of sickness and disease which is the work of Satan- Acts 10:38; 1 John 3:8. However, the Bible has numerous references concerning Christians suffering under persecution. Even Paul described his buffeting, that it had nothing to do with sickness or disease.

2 Corinthians 12:9-10

Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

1 Peter 2:21-24

To this you were called, because Christ suffered for you, leaving you an example, that you should follow in his steps. "He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth." When they hurled their insults at him, he did not retaliate; when he suffered, he made no threats. Instead, he entrusted himself to him who judges justly.

1 Peter 4:12-16

Dear friends, do not be surprised at the painful trial you are suffering, as though something strange were happening to you. But rejoice that you participate in the sufferings of Christ, so that you may be overjoyed when his glory is revealed. If you are insulted because of the name of Christ, you are blessed, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests on you. If you suffer, it should not be as a murderer or thief or any other kind of criminal, or even as a meddler. However, if you suffer as a Christian, do not be ashamed, but praise God that you bear that name.

For us as Christians, something is terribly wrong if we are suffering weakness, sickness and disease. It would be just as wrong for us, walking in fellowship with God, to be harassed with condemnation, guilt, anxiety and fear. Jesus redeemed us from the curse of the Law according to Galatians 3:13- Poverty, Sickness and Death. So there is suffering according to the will of God and suffering for things that are not the will of God! It is our responsibility to ensure we are not being taken advantage of by the enemy.

1 Peter 4:19

So then, those who suffer according to God's will should commit themselves to their faithful Creator and continue to do good.

Unit 2 Review:

What were the contributing factors to the fall of Lucifer?

Without being dogmatic on the subject, what is referred to as the “Pre-Adamite” creation?

Why is it important to study the subject of Satan and the kingdom of darkness?

Who is behind the “Curse of the Law” and why?

What is the “World System” all about according to the Bible?

Why does the devil send trials, tests and temptations into our lives?

II. Our Glorious Redemption

1. Blood Covenant

We need to briefly lay a foundation concerning blood covenant. The basis by which God and the ancient civilizations entered into agreement with one another. However, if you go to certain parts of the world, the practice of covenants in blood are still as active as it was thousands of years ago.

To our western mindset, the subject of blood covenant may conjure up images of barbaric primitives or aboriginal practices of ignorant peoples. Yet the whole concept of covenant was established by God Himself as a solemn legal contract or agreement. Even today we practice many forms of covenant in our society and do not even realize it.

I am absolutely convinced that the subject of blood covenant is one of the most important and misunderstood subjects in the Bible. When the child of God fully grasps in his/her spirit the ramifications of these powerful truths, all things truly become possible to them who believe as Jesus said in Mark 9:23.

The Bible is divided into two divisions: the Old Testament and the New Testament. The word testament comes from a Latin word, *testamentum*. The more proper name for these two divisions; however, is “covenant.” So the Bible is really the story of an Old Covenant and a New Covenant.

Now, in the Bible, the word covenant means a binding agreement between two parties. The Hebrew word for covenant is *Berith*. The Greek word is *Diatheke*. It actually means to “cut covenant.” By definition, it is an agreement to:

“Cut a covenant by the shedding of blood and walking between pieces of flesh.”

So the two divisions in the Bible are about an Old Blood Covenant and a New Blood Covenant!

A blood covenant between two parties is the closest, the most enduring, the most solemn and the most sacred of all contracts!

The first covenant recorded in the Bible was between God and Adam and Eve when an animal was slain and its skin used as a covering for them in Genesis 3:21. Job had a covenant with God, a life keeping Covenant, when he finally got his mind on his Covenant instead of his problems he was delivered. We can't get anything from God with self-pity, which is really selfishness in manifestation. God cut the Covenant with Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Moses. The subject of blood covenant is huge in the Bible, without it, there would be no salvation for mankind- PERIOD! This subject is quite pertinent to authority because of the sacredness that blood covenant brings to God's Word- Hebrews 6:18, “...in which it is impossible for God to lie...” Luke 21:33, “Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.” The Name of Jesus is backed by the blood of the New Covenant and can never fail!

A Covenant of blood, or the covenant of strong friendship; for example, Abraham through blood covenant becoming the friend of God. The covenant God cut with Abraham was a covenant of strong friendship, but the New Covenant Jesus cut on our behalf was a covenant of adoption into the family of God- a much stronger covenant relationship.

So what are some reasons people enter into covenant?

Protection- A covenant partner is bound to come to your aid when in trouble.

Provision- What is yours is mine and what is mine is yours.

Posterity- Descendants are covered and benefit from the relationship.

Relationship- A deep love, devotion and respect for each other.

The blood covenant is a very sacred. It is the most sacred covenant that mankind has ever known or has ever adhered to. Dr. Livingstone and Mr. Stanley were in Africa for many years as missionaries, and in all that time, they never heard of a covenant being broken.

Many Christians who are saved and filled with the Holy Spirit, do not realize they have a Covenant with God. We have covenant with God and it is a blood covenant. God used the vehicle of blood because of its sacredness, the life of the flesh is in the blood.

The blood is the sign of what is sacred, blood is not what makes the covenant sacred. The sacred thing is the covenant itself, WORDS, are the most sacred things that exist. The power of life and death are in the tongue. God and His Word are one! The universe was created and is governed by the Word of God. Words are eternal, and every word that is spoken on earth is recorded in heaven and written in books.

Jesus said every idle word that is spoken we will give an account, by our words we are saved or condemned. We reap what we sow. WORDS are HOLY !!!

Matthew 12:36-37

“But I tell you that men will have to give account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.”

The Word of the Living contract is a contract that can be interpreted only one way. Lawyers spend hours choosing words that will describe and explain the contract so it is not interpreted incorrectly. The Bible is a Covenant contract (OLD and NEW)- sacred and legal in the court of heaven.

Malachi 3:16

Then those who feared the LORD talked with each other, and the LORD listened and heard. A scroll of remembrance was written in his presence concerning those who feared the LORD and honored his name.

We will find throughout the Scriptures that God never did anything without saying it first. God is a faith God, His kingdom operates on faith principles. The source of God's power is found in the Word of His power. God wants us to be bold, not arrogant, but confident in Him that He will honor His Covenant. When we boldly declare of the devil to get out of our lives(provided we are walking in love) according to John 14:12, he must obey- God will see to it. God wants us to put Him in remembrance and declare the stipulations of the New Covenant so He can legally release His power on the earth and in the affairs of men. Isaiah 43:26 NKJV, *“Put Me in remembrance; Let us contend together; State your case, that you may be acquitted.”*

2. Authority Given to Human Beings on this Earth

Remember back in Genesis, it was to man that God had given dominion to rule over His creation. Jesus put it this way, the devil was not created as a part of God's redesign of earth and the introduction of mankind into this world. Satan was an outsider, an alien wanting in, a thief and a robber- "*but climbs in by some other way.*" Through the serpent and deceit he tricked Adam and Eve to give over the keys to man's dominion in the earth. Satan's objective was to steal man from God as a way of getting back at God. Satan wanted to rule again and set up his kingdom of darkness and dominate mankind.

But Jesus became a man, born into this world through the virgin birth. Jesus is the "*man who enters by the gate (and) is the shepherd of his sheep.*"

John 10:1-3

I tell you the truth, the man who does not enter the sheep pen by the gate, but climbs in by some other way, is a thief and a robber. The man who enters by the gate is the shepherd of his sheep. The watchman opens the gate for him, and the sheep listen to his voice. He calls his own sheep by name and leads them out.

In order for God or the devil to exert influence upon the earth, it must be done through people. This is why God the Son, became the Son of Man- Luke 5:24, "*But that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins. . . .*"

John 5:26-27

For as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to judge because he is the Son of Man.

It was originally through the vehicle of covenant that paved the way legally for God to send His Son to be the Savior of the world. That covenant I speak of was between God and Abraham. There is only one way to find out Abraham's commitment to the covenant. That way was to test Abraham with that which was most dear to him- his only son Isaac. All over the world, men in blood covenant were willing to give that which was most dear to them. Devotees of pagan gods would sacrifice their first-born child. Unfortunately this was a common practice; however this was something the Lord never required of his people to do (Deuteronomy 12:29-31; 18:10-13).

Jeremiah 19:5

They have built the high places of Baal to burn their sons in the fire as offerings to Baal - something I did not command or mention, nor did it enter my mind.

Yet in Abraham's case, God tested him with this very thing, to sacrifice his son as a burnt offering. However, God would never let Abraham go through with this act, but there is something absolutely huge that we must understand about this event.

Genesis 22:1-2

Sometime later God tested Abraham. He said to him, "Abraham!" "Here I am," he replied. Then God said, "Take your son, your only son, Isaac, whom you love, and go to the region of Moriah. Sacrifice him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains I will tell you about."

Abraham arises early the next morning to begin his three day journey toward a mountain, at a city called Salem, later to be called Jerusalem. This journey is described in Genesis 22. On the third day of the journey, God points out Mount Moriah where Isaac was to be sacrificed- Isaac was as good as dead in Abraham's heart.

Many scholars believe that Mount Moriah is the same location where Jesus was crucified. If Abraham would be willing to offer his son than God would in turn would offer His according to the covenant- that would make it legal for Jesus to come to earth as our Savior!

Notice the faith statement that Abraham makes in Genesis 22:5, stating that Abraham and Isaac would return back together. Abraham believed that even if God did take Isaac, He would resurrect him to be the first-born of the covenant children God had promised Abraham.

Genesis 22:5

He said to his servants, “Stay here with the donkey while I and the boy go over there. We will worship and then we will come back to you.”

Hebrews 11:17-19

By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, “It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned.” Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death.

Genesis 22:6-8

Abraham took the wood for the burnt offering and placed it on his son Isaac, and he himself carried the fire and the knife. As the two of them went on together, Isaac spoke up and said to his father Abraham, “Father?” “Yes, my son?” Abraham replied. “The fire and wood are here,” Isaac said, “but where is the lamb for the burnt offering?” Abraham answered, “God himself will provide the lamb for the burnt offering, my son.” And the two of them went on together.

John 1:29

The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, “Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!”

So Abraham builds the altar and places Isaac on it. Just as he was about to make the sacrifice and take his own son’s life, God intervenes and sends an angel to stop him. Interesting that Isaac was willing to be sacrificed, he could have over-powered his father but didn’t.

Genesis 22:11-12

But the angel of the LORD called out to him from heaven, “Abraham! Abraham!” “Here I am,” he replied. “Do not lay a hand on the boy,” he said. “Do not do anything to him. Now I know that you fear God, because you have not withheld from me your son, your only son.”

Isaac symbolizes humanity in that we deserved to die for our sin. However, Jesus is the lamb of God that God had provided as our substitute, to take our place upon the altar of sacrifice and tasted death for us so we could receive eternal life.

Genesis 22:13-14

Abraham looked up and there in a thicket he saw a ram caught by its horns. He went over and took the ram and sacrificed it as a burnt offering instead of his son. So Abraham called that place The LORD Will Provide. And to this day it is said, “On the mountain of the LORD it will be provided.”

However, the huge revelation here is that through Abraham's obedience to willingly offer his son as a sacrifice, it made it legal for God the Father to do the same and send His only Son (Jesus) into the world as the Lamb of God who takes away our sins- *Hebrews 9:26*, "But now Jesus has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself." Remember Abraham had a covenant with God, through his willingness to offer his son, God was able to reciprocate and offer His Son, Jesus- Satan could not challenge this, it was perfectly legal in the court of heaven.

However, unlike Isaac, God the Father allowed Jesus to be sacrificed for us and become a burnt offering for us; three days and three nights in the heart of the earth as our ultimate substitute- *Matthew 12:40*. Once the claims of justice were satisfied and the penalty of sin atoned for, God the Father raised Jesus from the dead and seated Him at His own right hand *Ephesians 1:19-22; 4:8-10*.

Jesus Christ is that perfect God-Man. The Bible declares that this was decided on before the foundations of the world. *And we were there when the covenant was cut because, as our Creator, we were in Him.*

1 Peter 1:18-20

For you know that it was not with perishable things such as silver or gold that you were redeemed from the empty way of life handed down to you from your forefathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, a lamb without blemish or defect. He was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake.

In God's own time, as He remembered the covenant that He made with Himself from the beginning, He came to the earth as one of us- flesh, blood and bones. He was born of the seed of woman, a virgin- *Galatians 4:4*. He was born of the seed of woman, not man, so that the blood flowing through His veins would be uncontaminated by Adam's sinful nature.

He didn't carry that deadly blood disease passed on by Adam called the sin nature- *Romans 5:12*. As God, He was perfectly holy and righteous- *Philippians 2:5-11*. And He prepared for Himself a body- *Hebrews 10:5*. It was a body that would not know sin (*Hebrews 4:15*); therefore, the blood in that body was spotless and without blemish- *Hebrews 9:14*. So the pre-existing, eternal Christ, the Son of God, exchanged names with us and became Jesus, the Son of Man as the representative for all mankind. He called Himself the Son of Man to identify Himself with all mankind. For 33 years He lived a perfect life in order to be the once for all perfect sacrifice for the sins of the whole world- every human being!

Jesus Cuts Covenant

During the covenant ceremony, Jesus gathered His disciples together to participate in the covenant meal of bread and wine. After the meal Jesus went out and left a memorial to the covenant. He planted a tree and poured out blood on it. But it wasn't the blood of bulls and goats; it was His own blood, and it wasn't a little nick in His wrist. It was all His blood poured out at the foot of the cross, the blood-stained tree that stands forever as a memorial to the covenant.

Galatians 3:13-14

Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree." He redeemed us in order that the blessing given to Abraham might come to the Gentiles through Christ Jesus, so that by faith we might receive the promise of the Spirit.

The "Lamb of God" slain from the foundations of the world cut covenant for all mankind, and we were there. We were crucified with Him (*Galatians 2:20*), because we were in Him as our Creator.

He took on our robe of self-righteousness which is like filthy rags- Isaiah 64:6. He took on our nature, the satanic sin nature. He took on all our liabilities which are the sins of all mankind. They were all placed on Him. All of our spiritual leprosy, that deadly blood disease we carry, was put on Him and He who knew no sin became sin for us- Isaiah 53:6; 2 Corinthians 5:21.

John 1:29-31

The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, “Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world! This is the one I meant when I said, ‘A man who comes after me has surpassed me because he was before me.’ I myself did not know him, but the reason I came baptizing with water was that he might be revealed to Israel.”

It was necessary for God to do this because the sin nature within each of us separates us from God. All of us have sinned and come short of God’s Glory according to Romans 3:23. The penalty for our sin is death- Romans 6:23. We all know this to be true which is why we were afraid of God. Jesus took all of this on Himself at the cross as our substitute, He took the rap or punishment for our spiritual crimes.

Ephesians 2:11-13

Therefore, remember that formerly you who are Gentiles by birth and called “uncircumcised” by those who call themselves “the circumcision” (that done in the body by the hands of men)- remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, without hope and without God in the world. But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far away have been brought near through the blood of Christ.

3. Death, Burial & Resurrection

Remember in the Garden of Eden, the declaration God had made just after Adam and Eve had sinned. It was a Prophetic statement concerning the undoing of Satan and his power over mankind and his ultimate demise.

Genesis 3:15

“And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel.”

What Jesus did in His death, burial and resurrection was the fulfillment of this Promise of deliverance, freedom, restoration and reconciliation for mankind.

1 Corinthians 1:18

For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.

It was at the cross that God the Father nailed not only our sin but our former sinful spiritual nature. When Christ died on the cross so did we, in the mind of God, we were identified with Christ. As a result, we are as dead to sin today as Jesus is. Sin has as much power and dominion over our lives as it does Jesus, which is none! What does it mean to be dead to sin?

Hebrews 9:26-28

But now Jesus has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself. Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment, so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.

John 1:29-30

The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, “Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!”

1 Peter 2:24-25

He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree, so that we might die to sins and live for righteousness; by his wounds you have been healed.

Psalms 103:11-12

For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us.

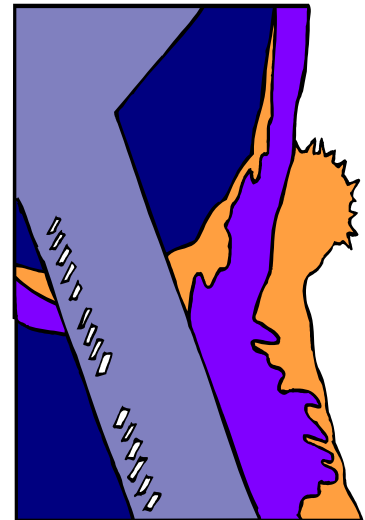
Hebrews 10:17- “Their sins and lawless acts I will remember no more.”

Hebrews 8:12- “For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more.”

Jesus bore our punishment for sin as our substitute so we would not have to!

For we know that our **old self** was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be rendered powerless, that we should no longer be slaves to sin- because anyone who has died has been freed from sin. Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him. For we know that since Christ was raised from the dead, he cannot die again; death no longer has mastery over him. The death he died, he died to sin once for all; but the life he lives, he lives to God. In the same way, count yourselves dead to sin but alive to God in Christ Jesus.

Romans 6:6-11



The term “Old Self” is referring to our old satanic sinful nature which was crucified with Jesus. Through the cross, God the Father put our old sinful spiritual nature to death. However, our physical body still has the sinful nature in it, but at least now with our spirit nature reborn into the image and likeness of God, we can keep our body under subjection to our spirit. In other words, through the cross we don’t have to be ruled by our body anymore. What the devil had accomplished in the garden by putting man to death through sin, Jesus had destroyed through the cross and the resurrection from the dead. *The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil’s work. (1 John 3:8).*

Colossians 2:13-14

When you were dead in your sins and in the uncircumcision of your sinful nature, God made you alive with Christ. He forgave us all our sins, having canceled the written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross.

God Nailed Our Old Sinful Spiritual Nature To The Cross Of Jesus!

Just take a moment and meditate on the reality of this fact that we have already died to sin. When we accepted Jesus Christ into our life as Lord and savior, we were born again. One cannot be **born again**, unless he/she dies first. Certainly the residual effects of that old sinful nature in our spirits had possibly years to corrupt our minds, but thank God through the washing of the water of the Word, we can renew our minds over time- Romans 12:3, Ephesians 4:23; 5:26, James 1:21. Unfortunately our physical bodies will not be redeemed until the catching away of the Church (Rapture)- Philippians 3:20-21; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18; 1 Corinthians 15:35-55.

Colossians 3:3-10

For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory. Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. Because of these, the wrath of God is coming. You used to walk in these ways, in the life you once lived. But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

The “you” in the above Scripture is referring to the spirit man, the real you! The old sinful nature is dead. I have the life and nature of God in my spirit- ETERNAL LIFE! I am identified with Christ. Just as Jesus experienced a spiritual resurrection, so have we!

2 Corinthians 5:14-16

For Christ’s love compels us, because we are convinced that one died for all, and therefore all died. And he died for all, that those who live should no longer live for themselves but for him who died for them and was raised again. So from now on we regard no one from a worldly point of view. Though we once regarded Christ in this way, we do so no longer.

In Christ we died to many things: participation in worldly lusts, our own selfish ambitions, motives, and fleshly nature, to sin and its affects upon our lives, and on and on the list goes. Keep in mind, our separation from sin was an instantaneous event when we were born again, but is also a progressive process throughout our lives on earth. Spiritually, we are free from sin now, but our minds are being renewed throughout our lifetime, and in the future as Christians we will all receive new bodies at the resurrection. At any rate according to verse 16, we are to see ourselves and other believers not from a worldly point of view (what we were like without Christ), but who we are now in Christ Jesus- DEAD TO SIN & THE SINFUL NATURE! As we learn to walk in that reality by God’s grace and our faith, the results of sin are eliminated from our lives.

UNDERSTANDING REDEMPTION IS KEY!!!

To fully appreciate and operate in the authority that we have in Christ Jesus, we must first have a firm foundation and understand the glorious redemption that was bought and paid for on our behalf by Jesus. The subject of redemption covers what we have been redeemed from and what we have been redeemed to. To redeem something means to buy back something that was once yours. We were created by God and in the beginning, our life belonged to God when we were conceived in our mother’s womb. Hebrews 12:9- How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live!

Romans 7:9

Once I was alive apart from law; but when the commandment came, sin sprang to life and I died.

However, when we reached the age of accountability, we had our “Garden of Eden” experience, each one of us made a choice to sin, to do wrong. At that moment in time we lost our innocence, lost our connection with God and became subservient to Satan as our new master. We were all created by God and originally belong to Him, but when we made that fatal choice to sin and exercised our free will, we died spiritually and became children of Satan.

Romans 6:23

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

By choosing to sin, we became the servants of sin, took on a new sinful nature from our new spiritual father called the devil. We became subject to the dominion and authority of the kingdom of darkness. We were kidnapped by Satan, thrown into a spiritual jail of sin, sickness and oppression.

Romans 6:16-17

Don't you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey — whether you are slaves to sin, which leads to death, or to obedience, which leads to righteousness?

1 John 3:10

This is how we know who the children of God are and who the children of the devil are: Anyone who does not do what is right is not a child of God; nor is anyone who does not love his brother.

Remember that the word “Redemption” means to buy back something that was once yours. We originally belonged to God, He had to buy us back from Satan through the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ. We have been delivered from the authority of darkness. Taken out of the control and dominion of darkness, Satan is not our lord or master anymore, Jesus is now our Lord and Master!

Mark 10:45

For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.

1 Timothy 2:5-6

For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave himself as a ransom for all men.

Colossians 1:9-14

For this reason, since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of his will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding. And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God, being strengthened with all power according to his glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light. For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

1 Corinthians 6:19-20

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own; you were bought at a price. Therefore honor God with your body.

The key to Satan's authority over the lives of people has always been sin. Sin is Satan's territory, all who sin fall under his jurisdiction and power- to kill, steal and destroy. When sin is taken away or removed from the equation, Satan's authority over people's lives is automatically removed. Legally, without sin, Satan has no right to oppress a person's life! That is why when Jesus came, His primary mission was to take care of the sin issue!

**Sin is what gives people over to the authority of the devil!
Jesus took that authority away from Satan by taking away our sins!**

Sin cannot dominate us anymore- Sin, Satan and the curse are synonymous terms- we have been redeemed from it all! Ignorance on this subject unconsciously gives authority over to the devil to dominate us. Until we know we are free, we will never act like we are free. Christians who still live under the bondages of the world, have not found out that they are free in Christ. Or they only have a head knowledge of it, but still don't believe it in their spirit.

Galatians 5:1

It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery.

2 Corinthians 3:17-18

Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. And we, who with unveiled faces all reflect the Lord's glory, are being transformed into his likeness with ever-increasing glory, which comes from the Lord, who is the Spirit.

It's not just acknowledging we are free, its knowing it in our spirit; building the Word of God in our heart brings revelation knowledge. Continuing in God's Word concerning our Glorious Redemption and developing these truths in our spirit is what makes a Christian free.

John 8:31-32 AMP

So Jesus said to those Jews who had believed in Him, If you abide in My word [hold fast to My teachings and live in accordance with them], you are truly My disciples. And you will know the Truth, and the Truth will set you free.

For us to walk consistently in the realm of authority and dominion over the powers of darkness, we first must know we have been delivered from sin and live our Christian lives without it dominating us anymore. I am not suggesting that we have to live perfect sinless lives first before we can exercise our God given authority over the devil. We will make mistakes in this life with our unredeemed bodies that still has a sinful nature in it and our minds that needs constant renewing- that's why we have 1 John 1:9. However, if we find ourselves continually living defeated Christian lives, with habits and strongholds holding us in bondage, we will never reach our full potential, God's highest will for our lives.

We have to learn what it means to be holy, sanctified; to set apart our lives unto God. The systematic lifestyle of crucifying the flesh and living in obedience to God's Word. To walk in love, by obeying God's commands by His grace through our faith in His Word.

Hebrews 12:1-2

Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses, let us throw off everything that hinders and the sin that so easily entangles, and let us run with perseverance the race marked out for us.

Romans 12:1-2

Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God — this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is — his good, pleasing and perfect will.

2 Timothy 2:20-21

In a large house there are articles not only of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay; some are for noble purposes and some for ignoble. If a man cleanses himself from the latter, he will be an instrument for noble purposes, made holy, useful to the Master and prepared to do any good work.

To be sanctified, simply means to set something aside for a holy use or purpose. We have already been made holy in Christ before God through the New Birth. However, being holy positionally before God in Jesus verses living out that new holy nature in our lives are too separate issues. What God does for us in Christ when we receive the gift of Eternal Life is a gift of God’s grace received instantaneously. We cannot add to or improve on these new creation realities, and they’ll be with us for all eternity.

1 Corinthians 1:30-31

It is because of him that you are in Christ Jesus, who has become for us wisdom from God — that is, our righteousness, holiness and redemption. Therefore, as it is written: “Let him who boasts boast in the Lord.”

Hebrews 10:10

And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Hebrews 13:12

And so Jesus also suffered outside the city gate to make the people holy through his own blood.

By God’s grace and through faith in His Word, we release the power of God in our lives to live out these eternal attributes of our re-born spiritual nature, to walk as Jesus did according to 1 John 2:6. I wish this life of obedience was automatic, but it requires deliberate choices of obedience on behalf of the believer. No we don’t get it right the first, second or third time; we must keep going to His throne of Grace and obtain Grace and Mercy in our time of need and keep fighting the good fight of faith- Hebrews 4:16; 1 Timothy 6:12. When we live our Christian life this way, we’ll have confidence to exercise this authority.

Romans 6:5-14

If we have been united with him like this in his death, we will certainly also be united with him in his resurrection. For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin— because anyone who has died has been freed from sin. Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him. For we know that since Christ was raised from the dead, he cannot die again; death no longer has mastery over him. The death he died, he died to sin once for all; but the life he lives, he lives to God. In the same way, count yourselves dead to sin but alive to God in Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its evil desires. Do not offer the parts of your body to sin, as instruments of wickedness, but rather offer yourselves to God, as those who have been brought from death to life; and offer the parts of your body to him as instruments of righteousness. For sin shall not be your master, because you are not under law, but under grace.

1 Peter 2:24 AMP

He personally bore our sins in His [own] body on the tree[as on an altar and offered Himself on it], that we might die (cease to exist) to sin and live to righteousness. By His wounds you have been healed [or by His bruising we are healed].

He bore our sins in His Body on the tree and He died because of those sins- absorbing in Himself the entirety of God's wrath and Satan's curse. We were also identified with Him in His death, burial and resurrection. As a result, we do not have to die again to sin, since we already have through Jesus.

Romans 3:22-26

There is no difference, for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus. God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. He did this to demonstrate his justice, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished— he did it to demonstrate his justice at the present time, so as to be just and the one who justifies those who have faith in Jesus.

When He was made alive, we were made alive with Him. In Christ we have died to our sins, we died to our old spiritual sinful nature, we died to our diseases, we died to poverty. When Jesus arose, we were raised with Him into the fullness of His resurrection life and power!

Galatians 2:20-21

I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not set aside the grace of God, for if righteousness could be gained through the law, Christ died for nothing!

Jesus has set us free from our old sin nature, freed us from the condemnation of all our sins that we have or will ever commit, no more bondage, but glorious liberty! As we come to understand this, we learn that our old sin nature hasn't any right or privilege to reign over us because it is dead. Just as a human corpse has no response to the things of this life, so we must learn to be dead to the passions of our flesh!

Romans 13:13-14

Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in orgies and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in dissension and jealousy. Rather, clothe yourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ, and do not think about how to gratify the desires of the sinful nature.

We will not accept any imitation of unworthiness, guilt, shame or condemnation that Satan may in our ignorance impose upon us concerning past sins that are under the blood of Jesus and blotted from our account. My friends, we have been pardoned of all wrong doing, we stand innocent like a new born babe before our Father God, the Judge of the Universe- through the redemptive work of Jesus Christ.

Romans 8:1 NKJV

There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ has bore all of our past, present and future sins as far as the east is from the west; we need never carry them again, neither do we need to suffer any condemnation for them. Jesus was already condemned and sentenced. He paid the penalty for all sin, paid in full so we don't have to. God's Amazing Grace how sweet the sound!

Consider the charge God had given to Cain concerning sin, just before he had murdered his brother Abel. Through God's grace and the provisions of the New Covenant, we are in a much greater position to master the sinful nature in our body through our re-created and righteous spiritual nature, energized by the Holy Spirit. As we renew our minds and re-program it with God's Word, our thinking and believing will change, this in turn will change how we live our lives.

Genesis 4:6-7

Then the Lord said to Cain, "Why are you angry? Why is your face downcast? If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it."

Ephesians 4:17-24

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, with a continual lust for more. You, however, did not come to know Christ that way. Surely you heard of him and were taught in him in accordance with the truth that is in Jesus. You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

Living a life of obedience to God's Word is not easy, but by His Grace and through our faith in His Word we are more than conquerors according to the Bible. The price we pay in living a holy life now, places us in a unique position to be used mightily by God. If we allow ourselves to be still dominated by sin after we get saved, we will go on living in condemnation, fear and weakness. The desire and passion to serve God and be a blessing to others will be gone. It's so worth it, to live a consecrated and dedicated life for the Lord; the souls of multitudes lay in the balance concerning our decision in this matter. Jesus is our ultimate example of what obedience and surrender to God's will produces. Unlike Jesus we are not the Savior for mankind, but we are His messengers and ambassadors to carry the message. With that calling of the Great Commission comes sacrifice, suffering persecution and greatest of all, crucifying our selfish desires that try to hinder us from fulfilling our God given destinies!

Hebrews 5:8-10

Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him.

1 Peter 4:1-3

Therefore, since Christ suffered in his body, arm yourselves also with the same attitude, because he who has suffered in his body is done with sin. As a result, he does not live the rest of his earthly life for evil human desires, but rather for the will of God. For you have spent enough time in the past doing what pagans choose to do — living in debauchery, lust, drunkenness, orgies, carousing and detestable idolatry.

Hebrews 12:2-3

Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. Consider him who endured such opposition from sinful men, so that you will not grow weary and lose heart.

Remember that we talked about the key to Satan's dominion over humanity is our sins. Jesus came first as a Lamb, but will return as a Lion to make His spiritual kingdom a physical one for a 1,000 year millennial rule. Jesus took away our sins so we can now, today in this life, reign as kings- Romans 5:17!

John 1:29-30

The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, "Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!"

1 John 2:2

He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not only for ours but also for the sins of the whole world.

4. Seated Together with Jesus at the Right Hand of the Father

We were raised together with Christ. He was raised up by the glory of the Father, when He had satisfied the claims of Justice for our sins, and had met our great enemy Satan and his army in the dark regions of hell and conquered them. He then was made alive in His spirit, and the firstborn from among the dead.

Colossians 1:18

And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy.

Then He arose and we rose with Him. He was raised up because God justified Him, and He could not be held any longer by death and hell. When He was justified, we were justified in Him. To all who are in Christ, Satan is a conquered foe. We are seated with Christ at the Right Hand of God, in the highest place of the Universe. Jesus has conquered death, hell and the grave!

Ephesians 2:4-7

But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions — it is by grace you have been saved. **And God raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly realms in Christ Jesus, in order that in the coming ages he might show the incomparable riches of his grace, expressed in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus.**

God put everything under His feet, the Church- every believer. This has already been done. Jesus is at the right hand of God and so are we. The mightiest working of God took place when He raised Jesus up from the dead and seated Him at His own right hand. God's will is that the eyes of the Church would be opened to understand this powerful reality.

Ephesians 1:19-21

That power is like the working of his mighty strength, which he exerted in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms, far above all rule and authority, power and dominion, and every title that can be given, not only in the present age but also in the one to come.

God wants us to know that He has set Jesus above all the power of the enemy and raised us up as well! When Jesus was raised, we were raised and seated with Him in heavenly places. The body and head are one and so it affected Jesus and the Church. When we think of a person, we do not think of their head as one thing and their body as something else- no they are all one. What belongs to Jesus belongs to us. We share in His victory and authority- this is life changing folks if we would just get a revelation of it.

Romans 6:4-14

We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life. If we have been united with him like this in his death, we will certainly also be united with him in his resurrection. For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin— because anyone who has died has been freed from sin. Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him. For we know that since Christ was raised from the dead, he cannot die again; death no longer has mastery over him. The death he died, he died to sin once for all; but the life he lives, he lives to God. In the same way, count yourselves dead to sin but alive to God in Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its evil desires. Do not offer the parts of your body to sin, as instruments of wickedness, but rather offer yourselves to God, as those who have been brought from death to life; and offer the parts of your body to him as instruments of righteousness. For sin shall not be your master, because you are not under law, but under grace.

In the mind of God we were raised with Jesus at His resurrection, when Jesus sat down we sat down, that is where we are right now. The sitting of Jesus means that certain aspects of His work are done- the fullness is yet to come. Right now we are seated with Him, with all the authority given to Him and to us, His Body, the Church. For what purpose, to carry out His work on the earth as His body. The will of God is done through us; by our faith, prayers, praise and speaking the Word and the Name of Jesus. We are seated with Christ high above all the power of the enemy- right now!

Galatians 5:1

It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery.

Jesus already overcame the devil for us and we are to dominate him, not the other way around. If we don't exercise it and take advantage of it, the devil will overcome us. It is not automatic, we have to act on the Word and the Name of Jesus. Salvation belongs to all humanity, but if they don't accept it for themselves, it won't do them any good. Why doesn't salvation just automatically apply to them all; they have a free will to choose, whether they want to accept it or reject it.

Hosea 4:6- “My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge.”

This why God put teachers in the Church, so they can present revelation truth for believers to receive and enter into God's provision for their lives today. It's imperative that we find out what belongs to us and take advantage of it- why, so we can become greedy, selfish children of God. Like the rest of the “Name it and claim it, blab it and grab it” folks. People that believe that are truly missing the whole idea here. It's about being blessed to be a blessing to others- to serve others with it. If a Christian is weak, poor and sick, that is a hindrance to fulfilling the Great Commission – right? Besides, God as a loving heavenly Father never intends for His children to be oppressed and harassed by the devil. I'm not going to feel guilty for enjoying abundant life in Jesus while seeking first His kingdom in my life!

Matthew 10:8-9

Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.

Acts 20:35

“In everything I did, I showed you that by this kind of hard work we must help the weak, remembering the words the Lord Jesus himself said: ‘It is more blessed to give than to receive.’”

Certainly, there are plenty of carnal Christians who try to exploit the Promises of God solely for their own benefit. For them prosperity is a matter of greed, healing for their lives fuels their self-seeking pursuits. We need to pray for them that they see the bigger picture of God's mission to reach a lost and dying world. Just because a few bad examples are floating around out there does not mean I'm going to "Throw the baby out with the bath water" so-to-speak. Living a blessed life is a great witness to unbelievers of God's Grace for our lives now and for eternity.

1 Timothy 6:5, 10

"...who have been robbed of the truth and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain. For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs."

If we don't know what belongs to us, we can't experience it. Even if we know it, but do not act on it, even though it's ours, it still won't do us any good. Let us rise up and act on God's Word for our lives. The trouble is we have not found out who we are in Christ.

Psalms 119:130- The entrance of Your words gives light; It gives understanding to the simple.

Please do not misunderstand what I am about to say, please stay open minded to the concept I am about to share. I believe the church has had too much emphasis on the cross of Jesus instead of the throne that Jesus sits on. As a consequence, the Church does not understand the power of the resurrection like they should. We have sung "Lord keep me near the cross," no we don't want to stay near the cross; some folks only preach a cross religion- that is a religion of death.

1 Corinthians 15:12-20

But if it is preached that Christ has been raised from the dead, how can some of you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? If there is no resurrection of the dead, then not even Christ has been raised. And if Christ has not been raised, our preaching is useless and so is your faith. More than that, we are then found to be false witnesses about God, for we have testified about God that he raised Christ from the dead. But he did not raise him if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, then Christ has not been raised either. And if Christ has not been raised, your faith is futile; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ are lost. If only for this life we have hope in Christ, we are to be pitied more than all men. But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep.

Don't misunderstand me, we have to go by the cross, but don't stop there go by the empty tomb and the resurrection, but don't stop there, go by the day of Pentecost, but don't stop there! We must dive into the reality of the Epistles and who we are in Christ which is where we are today in Christ Jesus- seated with Him at the right hand of the Father. We will never live a successful Christian life until we learn to live in the Epistles, the letters written to the Church- it's the absolute truth! Teach the cross, but major on the Resurrection, Pentecost and the Epistles.

Philippians 3:10-11

I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his sufferings, becoming like him in his death, and so, somehow, to attain to the resurrection from the dead.

The concept of “Cross Religion” has actually become an idol for many religious folks. When only one side of redemption is taught, the cross, which is only part of it, but not the whole story. We have sung “Keep me near the cross” and we were thinking we were staying near God by staying near the cross. The cross was a symbol of death, defeat, a place of execution, shame and humiliation. Certainly go by the cross, but don’t stay there, don’t camp there, go onto Pentecost and get filled with the Spirit, but don’t stay there come over to the Epistles and find out that we have been raised up together with Jesus and are presently seated together with Him at the right hand of the Father- that is what will give us victory, not keeping us near the cross.

Romans 8:34

Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died — more than that, who was raised to life — is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us.

I might as well go on and expose another religious tradition that I believe has hindered the Body of Christ. There is too much death being preached, some have said, “Well I need to die to self.” No we don’t if we are already born again. Our old spiritual sinful nature was already crucified with Christ. We don’t want the new creation to die, we want it to flourish and take the ascendancy in our life. What we need to do according to the Bible is crucify the sinful nature in our physical bodies by renewing our minds with the Word!

Galatians 5:24-26

Those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the sinful nature with its passions and desires. Since we live by the Spirit, let us keep in step with the Spirit. Let us not become conceited, provoking and envying each other.

We can’t let our body dominate us, it’s not redeemed yet- thankfully we will get a new body. Until then we bring it under subjection and offer it unto God as a living sacrifice. It’s not a sin for our body to want to do wrong, it’s a sin when we let it have what it wants, when it violates God’s Word. We have to bring it under subjection, that is not God’s job, but the Holy Spirit will help us. It’s only to be done by God’s Grace through faith- our faith in His Word. God won’t take our bad habits, we have to cut them off and cut them out of our lives. When we read Mark 9:42-50, Jesus is addressing the awfulness of sin, that it’s not worth hanging onto at the expense of losing our soul. When we consider the trauma afflicted upon an individual who was to cut off their hand, foot or pluck out an eye, it’s nothing compared to the horrors of the Lake of Fire for all eternity which is the Second Death.

Mark 9:42-50

“And if anyone causes one of these little ones who believe in me to sin, it would be better for him to be thrown into the sea with a large millstone tied around his neck. If your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life maimed than with two hands to go into hell, where the fire never goes out. And if your foot causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life crippled than to have two feet and be thrown into hell. And if your eye causes you to sin, pluck it out. It is better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than to have two eyes and be thrown into hell, where

**‘their worm does not die,
and the fire is not quenched.’
Everyone will be salted with fire.**

Salt is good, but if it loses its saltiness, how can you make it salty again? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with each other.”

Unit 3 Review:

Why is the concept of blood covenant so important to our study on authority?

Why was it necessary for Abraham to offer Isaac as a sacrifice?

At the cross, what happened to our old sinful spiritual nature?

Redemption is key to the study of the authority of the believer- why?

Why is sin so important to Satan's authority over folks lives?

What is so significant about being raised with Christ and seated with Him at the Father's right hand?

5. Baptized Into the Name of Jesus

The Greek the word “Baptism” means to “Submerge, immerse; to make overwhelmed, fully wet.” I would like to briefly mention right now, four different kinds of baptisms and then go into greater detail on the first baptism that Christians undertake.

Hebrews 6:1-3

Therefore let us leave the elementary teachings about Christ and go on to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death, and of faith in God, instruction about baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so.

Baptized into Christ

The first baptism occurred when you and I confessed Jesus as Lord and were born again; we were put into or immersed into the Body of Christ according to:

1 Corinthians 12:13

For we were all baptized by one Spirit into one body — whether Jews or Greeks, slave or free — and we were all given the one Spirit to drink.

This is the one and only baptism that saves us, it was when we were connected to the Body of Christ and became one in spirit with our Lord and Master Jesus Christ-1 Corinthians 6:17, *“But he who unites himself with the Lord is one with him in spirit.”* When we were born again, we were baptized, immersed and put into the Body of Christ.

Water Baptism

Water baptism is the symbolic expression, testimony and declaration of what has already taken place-coming into union with Jesus Christ.

1 Peter 3:21-22

And this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also — not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a good conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who has gone into heaven and is at God’s right hand — with angels, authorities and powers in submission to him.

Water baptism should be performed in a body of water that is deep enough for the individual to be completely immersed and covered since that is what the word means. Just prior to being immersed under water, here is a typical statement that one may use when baptizing someone in water:

“In the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, I now baptize you into the Name of the Father,
The Son and The Holy Spirit.”

Matthew 28:19

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

Acts 10:48- So he ordered that they be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

The Bible makes it plain that water Baptism does not save us, but is a powerful outward demonstration of an inward work that has already happened when we confessed Jesus as Lord. It is a powerful proclamation to heaven, earth and hell that we have decided to follow Jesus. It's no longer a secret, we are letting everyone know our allegiance, love and devotion to Jesus. It's a total committal, no going back to the old life in the world, it's a decision that Jesus is our Lord and we will follow Him all the days of our life. We are drawing a line in the sand that Jesus is Lord and Master over our lives forever!

Baptism in the Holy Spirit

The Third Baptism, is to be baptized with the Holy Spirit and to speak in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance. Though the Bible has much to say on this subject, it is amazing to me how many Christians have been duped out of receiving this indescribable power that Jesus commanded us to have in order to fulfill the Great Commission- in God's power instead of our own.

Luke 3:16

John answered them all, "I baptize you with water. But one more powerful than I will come, the thongs of whose sandals I am not worthy to untie. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire."

Acts 1:4-5

On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: "Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit."

Acts 2:4

All of them were filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other tongues as the Spirit enabled them.

Speaking with other tongues would be done through His Name as a sign of being a believer in Him.

Mark 16:17-18

"And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

Baptism of Suffering

The fourth baptism is not available to all; it is brought up by Jesus when James and John asked to sit on His left and right throne in the millennium. Jesus had asked them if they were able to undergo the baptism that He would be baptized with. That was the baptism of suffering martyrdom for the gospel. All the apostles of the Lamb were martyrs except for John, who was the only one who died of natural old age- Paul was certainly baptized in this baptism.

Mark 10:35-40

Then James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came to him. "Teacher," they said, "we want you to do for us whatever we ask." "What do you want me to do for you?" he asked. They replied, "Let one of us sit at your right and the other at your left in your glory." "You don't know what you are asking," Jesus said. "Can you drink the cup I drink or be baptized with the baptism I am baptized with?" "We can," they answered. Jesus said to them, "You will drink the cup I drink and be baptized with the baptism I am baptized with, but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared."

Let's go back to the first and most important of all baptisms, that is when we were baptized into Christ. When an individual confesses Jesus as Lord and Savior, they are immediately baptized into Jesus Christ and placed into His Body. The Greek word for "Baptism" is immersion, to be completely covered. Being Baptized into Jesus Christ has a three-fold meaning:

First: It is the death and burial of the past

Second: It is a resurrection into a new relationship

Third: It is a union with the one in whose Name we have been baptized into

Romans 6:3-4

Or don't you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.

Galatians 3:27-29

For all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

The Bride of Christ

When one is Baptized into Christ, in one sense it is equivalent to marriage. The Scriptures make this connection between Jesus and His Church. Jesus is the groom and collectively as believers, we are His Bride. When the wife enters into marriage she takes her husband's name and partakes of her husband's possessions and has legal rights in his home- identified with him in all that he was or ever will be. So when the believer is baptized into the Name of the Lord Jesus, he puts on the Name of the Lord Jesus. He not only puts on the Name (Christian), but he takes his legal rights and privileges in Christ. We are baptized into all that Name stands for, all its wealth, all its honor, all its power, all its past, present and future glory- Acts 11:26, *"The disciples were called Christians first at Antioch."*

Ephesians 5:22-32

Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church, his body, of which he is the Savior. Now as the church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless. In this same way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. After all, no one ever hated his own body, but he feeds and cares for it, just as Christ does the church— for we are members of his body. "For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh." **This is a profound mystery — but I am talking about Christ and the church. However, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband.**

Revelation 19:7-8

"Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory! For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his bride has made herself ready. Fine linen, bright and clean, was given her to wear."

The Body of Christ

The incredible reality of being connected and joined to Jesus as members of His Body is a profound truth in the Scriptures. This revelation is significant in understanding the authority of the believer. Your head does not go by one name and your body by another. So the Body of Christ is Christ, Jesus is the Head and we are His Body, we are one in spirit with Him.

1 Corinthians 12:13-27

For we were all baptized by one Spirit into one body — whether Jews or Greeks, slave or free — and we were all given the one Spirit to drink. Now the body is not made up of one part but of many. If the foot should say, “Because I am not a hand, I do not belong to the body,” it would not for that reason cease to be part of the body. And if the ear should say, “Because I am not an eye, I do not belong to the body,” it would not for that reason cease to be part of the body. If the whole body were an eye, where would the sense of hearing be? If the whole body were an ear, where would the sense of smell be? But in fact God has arranged the parts in the body, every one of them, just as he wanted them to be. If they were all one part, where would the body be? As it is, there are many parts, but one body. The eye cannot say to the hand, “I don’t need you!” And the head cannot say to the feet, “I don’t need you!” On the contrary, those parts of the body that seem to be weaker are indispensable, and the parts that we think are less honorable we treat with special honor. And the parts that are unpresentable are treated with special modesty, while our presentable parts need no special treatment. But God has combined the members of the body and has given greater honor to the parts that lacked it, so that there should be no division in the body, but that its parts should have equal concern for each other. If one part suffers, every part suffers with it; if one part is honored, every part rejoices with it. Now you are the body of Christ, and each one of you is a part of it.

1 Corinthians 6:15-17

Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ himself? Shall I then take the members of Christ and unite them with a prostitute? Never! Do you not know that he who unites himself with a prostitute is one with her in body? For it is said, “The two will become one flesh.” But he who unites himself with the Lord is one with him in spirit.

Obviously the Scriptures put Jesus as the Head of His own Body. He exerts executive leadership over His own Body the Church. Jesus is called the “Chief Shepherd” in 1 Peter 5:4.

Ephesians 1:22-23

And God placed all things under his feet and appointed him to be head over everything for the church, which is his body, the fullness of him who fills everything in every way.

Jesus has set those into Five-Fold ministry offices to exercise leadership and ministry for the purpose of training believers to do the work of the ministry.

Ephesians 4:12-13

To prepare God’s people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ.

Even the observance of Communion or the Lord’s Supper is among other things, a unifying practice for believers to participate in. Reminding us of the fact that we are one Body, members in particular.

1 Corinthians 10:16-17

Is not the cup of thanksgiving for which we give thanks a participation in the blood of Christ? And is not the bread that we break a participation in the body of Christ? Because there is one loaf, we, who are many, are one body, for we all partake of the one loaf.

1 Corinthians 11:28-29

A man ought to examine himself before he eats of the bread and drinks of the cup. For anyone who eats and drinks without recognizing the body of the Lord eats and drinks judgment on himself.

Just as our physical head needs the body to carry out our will, desire and authority, so it is with Jesus and His Church. Due to religious traditions of men, Jesus has been hindered in the earth from doing all He wants to do. I thought Jesus is Sovereign, yes He is, He Sovereignly made it this way that He depends on and works through His Body in the earth to carry out His will. If we aren't obedient, it hinders the plan of God. There is an old saying, "When good men fail to act evil prevails." From a Christian perspective it could go this way, "When the Church does not pray and exercise her authority in the earth through the Name of Jesus, the devil is allowed to kill, steal and destroy more." Let's start saying what the Bible says about us and work with the Lord as co-laborers with Him! The Head carries out His will through His body. The Body has the same authority as the Head does, because they are one—we are one in spirit with the Lord. As Christians anointed with the same Holy Spirit!

Matthew 18:18-20 AMP

Truly I tell you, whatever you forbid and declare to be improper and unlawful on earth must be what is already forbidden in heaven, and whatever you permit and declare proper and lawful on earth must be what is already permitted in heaven. Again I tell you, if two of you on earth agree (harmonize together, make a symphony together) about whatever [anything and everything] they may ask, it will come to pass and be done for them by My Father in heaven. For wherever two or three are gathered (drawn together as My followers) in (into) My name, there I AM in the midst of them.

When we are baptized into the Name of the Father, it gives us the place of a child of God. This includes all the privileges, all the inheritance and wealth of a child of God. We are baptized into the protective care and fellowship of the God of the universe as our Father. We are cutting ties and turning our backs to the world and from the old life and surrendering ourselves into a new life, identification, position, and spiritual nature. We have the standing of a son, the privilege of a son, the responsibilities and duties of a son. We have become all this by that baptism into Christ at the New Birth, a joint heir with Jesus and an heir of God. We have entered into the wealth of an inheritance given us by the God of the universe.

Romans 8:17

Now if we are children, then we are heirs — heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory.

Colossians 2:13- God made you alive with Christ.

Colossians 2:20- Since you died with Christ to the basic principles of this world.

Colossians 3:1- Since, then, you have been raised with Christ.

Colossians 3:3- For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God.

Galatians 2:20

I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

The glorious fact of our identification with Christ is one of the richest facts in the whole Plan of Redemption. We were crucified with Christ- we were nailed to the cross with Him, in the mind of God. As He was stripped naked and hung there in His shame and disgrace, so were we- for He took our place on the cross.

Hebrews 13:12-13

And so Jesus also suffered outside the city gate to make the people holy through his own blood. Let us, then, go to him outside the camp, bearing the disgrace he bore.

- We died with Christ, as He died
- As He died to sin, so we died to sin
- As He died to Satan's rule, so we died to it
- As He died to sickness and disease, we died

We were buried together with Him as He went down into the place of suffering and paid the penalty for our sins and the union we had with Satan. As He put off from Himself the forces of darkness and sin, the sickness and diseases of man, so we put them off in Him- we left them there. When He died, He carried all my sins, sickness, diseases, poverty, fear oppression, and my old sinful spiritual nature far away never to return again. He rose from the dead having crushed all these things, having separated them from us for all eternity.

Isaiah 53:4 AMP

Surely He has borne our griefs (sicknesses, weaknesses, and distresses) and carried our sorrows and pains [of punishment], yet we [ignorantly] considered Him stricken, smitten, and afflicted by God [as if with leprosy]. [Matthew 8:17.]

1 Peter 2:24 AMP

He personally bore our sins in His [own] body on the tree[as on an altar and offered Himself on it], that we might die (cease to exist) to sin and live to righteousness. By His wounds you have been healed.

Romans 5:6-8

You see, at just the right time, when we were still powerless, Christ died for the ungodly. Very rarely will anyone die for a righteous man, though for a good man someone might possibly dare to die. But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

Since Jesus carried all forms of sin and death, I don't have to carry them anymore, if I do allow these things to dominate my life than what Jesus did in His death burial and resurrection for me was done in vain. All of this is already ours in redemption, we don't have to ask for, it is already ours. All we need to do is praise Him for it, and when we praise Him and thank Him for it, then the reality of it becomes operative in our life. I take possession and appropriate my redemptive rights through my confession of God's Word on the matter. So now, I stand before God and the angels, yes and before Satan clothed in Christ, hidden in Christ, enwrapped in Christ- Romans 13:14.

Matthew 11:28-30

"Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light."

2 Corinthians 6:1-2

As God's fellow workers we urge you not to receive God's grace in vain. For he says, "In the time of my favor I heard you, and in the day of salvation I helped you." I tell you, now is the time of God's favor, now is the day of salvation.

1 John 4:17 (NKJV) - "As He is, so are we in this world."

1 Peter 3:18-20

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also he went and preached to the spirits in prison who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built.

Colossians 1:18-19

And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy.

Identified with Him in suffering persecution and shame and in glory!

Romans 8:18

I consider that our present sufferings are not worth comparing with the glory that will be revealed in us.

Colossians 3:4

When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

We are so fully identified and so completely at one with Him that it can no longer be we that live, but He that lives His life in and through us. His wisdom is to take the place of our ignorance; His strength is to take the place of our weakness; His victories are to take the place of our failures.

Philippians 3:12-14

Not that I have already obtained all this, or have already been made perfect, but I press on to take hold of that for which Christ Jesus took hold of me. Brothers, I do not consider myself yet to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind and straining toward what is ahead, I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus.

When we were baptized into Jesus, we are baptized into the Name, wealth, power, wisdom and glory of God, as His representatives on the earth- all Jesus has accomplished, we are baptized into. We have become a fellowship of His grace, His tenderness, His wisdom, His ability, His power, His life.

Philippians 2:1-2

If you have any encouragement from being united with Christ, if any comfort from his love, if any fellowship with the Spirit, if any tenderness and compassion, then make my joy complete by being like-minded, having the same love, being one in spirit and purpose.

The entire plan of Redemption heads up in this wonderful word, "Fellowship" for what would Redemption and a New Creation mean if He had no fellowship with His children. The secrets of the Lord are with those who are in fellowship with Him.

The reason why “Believers” are unable to get into the Word and enjoy the fruit and privileges in Christ is because their fellowship is either broken or they have a very superficial form of fellowship.

1 Corinthians 1:9

God, who has called you into fellowship with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, is faithful.

The happiness of the home is in the fellowship between the members of that household. The real fruit is fellowship. We will never see divine love in the Divorce court. There should never be a divorce if fellowship had not been broken by the husband and wife. When fellowship is broken, they simply endure each other. The desire for fellowship is the reason for marriage, and the joy of fellowship is a wonderful fruit of marriage. When one is born again and becomes a New Creation, the greatest joy that the spirit has ever known comes from his/her fellowship with the Father, Jesus the Spirit and the Word of God.

Matthew 13:44 NKJV

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and hid; and for joy over it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.”

Romans 5:11

Not only is this so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation.

When fellowship is broken with the Lord because of sin, we do not cease to be a child of God, our relationship is intact; it’s just that our fellowship has been severed. Now there is sin that does lead to death, but that is beyond the scope of this study- 1 John 5:16-17; Hebrews 6:4-8; 10:26-39; 2 Peter 2:20-22. Broken fellowship is usually the culprit behind a loss of appetite for the Word, Prayer & Praise.

1 John 1:3-4

We proclaim to you what we have seen and heard, so that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ. We write this to make our joy complete.

There is a big difference between joy and happiness. Happiness is when one experiences favorable circumstances, the world provides a temporary state of happiness. Joy on the other hand is supernatural, it comes from God alone and fills us with life, strength, endurance and vigor no matter what the circumstances- it is a fruit of our re-created human spirit according to Galatians 5:22.

The key is to be quick to forgive, quick to repent and quick to obey God’s Word. In this way we stay under the blood and protection of God. We always want to be in a position to use the Name of Jesus at all times. A believer living in sin and broken fellowship due to unrepentant sin is the most miserable person on earth. This is because our own spirit will be grieved and saddened when we sin. If a believer persists in this state of being backslidden from God there is a real danger that his/her heart will become hardened to sin; even to the point where it does not bother them anymore. That is a very dangerous and risky place to be spiritually!

Hebrews 3:12-15

See to it, brothers, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness. We have come to share in Christ if we hold firmly till the end the confidence we had at first.

For believers, when they sin, their own heart will condemn them; no the Holy Spirit does not convict the believer of sin, there is no Scripture for that. In John 16:5-11, you will see that the Holy Spirit convicts the world of sin(singular) and not of sins (plural)- the singular sin of not believing on Jesus.



1 John 3:19-22

This then is how we know that we belong to the truth, and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence whenever **our hearts condemn us. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. Dear friends, **if our hearts do not condemn us**, we have confidence before God and receive from him anything we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him.**

When the believer sins, all they have to do is confess it to God and ask for forgiveness. The same blood of Jesus that remitted us of sin and the spiritual sin nature at the time we were born again, is the same blood that cleanses us of all sin that we commit during our Christian walk. The blood of Jesus has the same affect on our sin; blots it out, eradicates it and disintegrates it. As far as the east is from the west, so far He will remove it from us, no longer to be charged against us- Psalm 103:12!

1 John 1:8-10

If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. If we claim we have not sinned, we make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.

The moment we confess our sins, Jesus is right there as our advocate to silence the accusations of the devil and restore our broken fellowship. Jesus is our great High Priest who ever lives to make intercession for us.

1 John 2:1-2

My dear children, I write this to you so that you will not sin. But if anybody does sin, we have one who speaks to the Father in our defense — Jesus Christ, the Righteous One. He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not only for ours but also for the sins of the whole world.

Hebrews 7:23-25

Now there have been many of those priests, since death prevented them from continuing in office; but because Jesus lives forever, he has a permanent priesthood. Therefore he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them.

Romans 8:33-34

Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God who justifies. Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died — more than that, who was raised to life — is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us.

2 Corinthians 1:2-4

Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God.

So when we are baptized into the Name of the Lord Jesus, all that that Name stands for in heaven is ours; all the mighty victories that Jesus won in His death, burial and resurrection are ours. This is what it means to be baptized into the Glorious Godhead as stated in Matthew 28:18-20. Spiritually it means this, if it means anything: That we are baptized into all that Name means in the Plan of Redemption- we are baptized into the Finished work of Christ.

Matthew 28:18-20

Then Jesus came to them and said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

Of His fullness we have all received, and in Him we are full and complete. All the grace that was manifest in Christ enwraps us, enfolds us, we are in it. All the perfections and beauties in the character and life of Jesus are ours- Colossians 2:10 (NKJV), *“You are complete in Him!”*

John 1:16-18

From the fullness of his grace we have all received one blessing after another. For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. No one has ever seen God, but God the One and Only, who is at the Father’s side, has made him known.

1 John 2:5- But if anyone obeys his word, God’s love is truly made complete in him.

1 John 4:12- No one has ever seen God; but if we love one another, God lives in us and his love is made complete in us.

When confess Jesus as Lord, we take on His Name as Christians. The word “Christ” means anointed ones, so as Christians we are anointed followers of Jesus Christ, identified as belonging to Him. Think of the responsibility attached to it! Think of the glories enwrapped in it! Think of the blessings that accrue from it! To be baptized into the Name of Jesus Christ, and the putting on of Christ, bearing the Name of Jesus is the greatest honor that heaven can confer upon a human. The Lord lifts us up, enables us by His grace, to enter into our inheritance and to assume our responsibilities in His wonderful family. He won no victory and He won no triumph in His substitutionary work that was not for the benefit of His Church, His Body!

His righteousness is ours, His love is ours; all the graces that adorned His beautiful life are ours. When we put on Christ in baptism, we are by His grace able to enjoy all the power of God in our lives. As believers, all these riches, all these graces are ours. By faith, when we accepted Jesus as our Lord and Savior, all the wealth and riches of Christ Jesus became ours positionally. We stand clothed in the rights, privileges, and powers of the Son of God. All that Name stands for in heaven is ours; all the mighty victories He won in His death, suffering, and conquest in hell and His resurrection are ours. Jesus did all this for our benefit, He had nothing to prove but for mankind to be saved, redeemed and restored back to their original position of glory in God’s presence as it was in the beginning- Colossians 1:27;2:2. Let’s meditate on these truths until they become a reality in our lives!

6. The Court Room of Heaven

Jesus is our Advocate, our go-between; 1 John 2:1-2 in the NKJV version uses the word “Advocate” while the NIV provides an explanation as to what the word means- “One who speaks to the Father in our defense.” The Ancient of Days sits as the ultimate judge of the universe!



“As I looked, thrones were set in place, and the Ancient of Days took his seat. His clothing was as white as snow; the hair of his head was white like wool. His throne was flaming with fire, and its wheels were all ablaze. A river of fire was flowing, coming out from before him. Thousands upon thousands attended him; ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. The court was seated, and the books were opened.”

Daniel 7:9-10

When God issues judgment, He allows the devil to issue out the punishment- the curse of breaking God’s law. Satan is the manifestation of the curse of the law and is the dealer of death- the death angel in Egypt that had killed the first-born! Concerning Job, in the original Hebrew language what God said to the devil in Job 1:8 was, *“I see that you have set your attention upon my servant Job.”* Contrary to popular belief, God was not dangling Job out for the devil to take a bite. Satan was upset concerning Job being righteous and rich with power and influence for God- it chafed him! Let’s look at how the affairs of mankind are played out in the court of heaven in the spiritual realm. First, we will examine some legal terms in the Bible:

Advocate:

1 John 2:1-2

My dear children, I write this to you so that you will not sin. But if anybody does sin, we have one who speaks to the Father in our defense — Jesus Christ, the Righteous One. He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not only for ours but also for the sins of the whole world.

1 John 2:1-2 NKJV

My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

Intercessor:

Intercession is a legal term, describing a lawyer pleading to the Judge on behalf of His client.

Romans 8:34-35

Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died — more than that, who was raised to life — is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us.

Mediator:

1 Timothy 2:5-6

For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave himself as a ransom for all men — the testimony given in its proper time.

Justified:**Romans 5:1-3**

Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have gained access by faith into this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God.

Righteous:**Romans 3:20-22**

Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin. But now a righteousness from God, apart from law, has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe.

Pardon:

Notice that one translation uses forgive and the other pardon- inner-changeable. Like the word "Remitted" in conjunction with sin, it means our sins are blotted out, erased, terminated so that nothing remains, no reminder of past sins- this is what the blood of Jesus does. When a criminal is pardoned, legally they are reinstated into society as though they had done nothing wrong, it's as though they never committed the crime in the first place.

Psalms 25:11

For the sake of your name, O Lord, forgive my iniquity, though it is great.

Psalms 25:11 NKJV

For Your name's sake, O Lord, Pardon my iniquity, for it is great.

Condemned:**Matthew 12:37**

For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.

These words: Advocate, Intercession, Mediator, Justified, Righteous, Pardoned, Condemned are all legal terms and they are used in connection with our redemption. God did everything by the book, He is the Judge of the universe and He follows His own spiritual laws; Psalms 7:11, "*God is a righteous judge, a God who expresses his wrath every day.*" God passes judgments they do not please Him. As much as God loves us, He will not pervert His justice on our behalf, nor let us off the hook without justice being served.

Ezekiel 18:23

Do I take any pleasure in the death of the wicked? declares the Sovereign Lord. Rather, am I not pleased when they turn from their ways and live?

Ezekiel 33:10-11

"Son of man, say to the house of Israel, This is what you are saying: 'Our offenses and sins weigh us down, and we are wasting away because of them. How then can we live?' Say to them, 'As surely as I live, declares the Sovereign Lord, I take no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but rather that they turn from their ways and live. Turn! Turn from your evil ways! Why will you die, O house of Israel?'"

Romans 3:19

Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, so that every mouth may be silenced and the whole world held accountable to God.

John 5:22-23

Moreover, the Father judges no one, but has entrusted all judgment to the Son, that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father, who sent him.

Suppose a judge has his only son brought before him in regards to a grievous crime that he committed. The son takes the stand and pleads guilty to the crime, what can his father do, if he really loves him and is just, what is left for him to do? The son confessed to the crime, according to the law the father must declare him guilty and pronounce judgment, sentence him with the appropriate punishment, even though it rips his heart. If the judge does not do his job and condemn his son, he is an unjust judge, partial and unfit for office.

I want you to understand, as believers on Jesus, if we do not judge ourselves and do what God tells us to do, in order to keep from being judged, He has no option but to find us guilty and judge us, which allows the devil access to us. This is not talking about our salvation or the sins Jesus paid 2,000 years ago. I am making reference to the here and now, in our daily Christian walk. If we get over into the area of unrepentant sin, we open the door to devil to come into our lives to kill, steal and destroy. Our free will needs to be quick to forgive and quick to repent in order to keep the door shut. It's our job to keep the devil out of our lives not God's!

1 Corinthians 11:29-32

For anyone who eats and drinks without recognizing the body of the Lord eats and drinks judgment on himself. That is why many among you are weak and sick, and a number of you have fallen asleep. But if we judged ourselves, we would not come under judgment. When we are judged by the Lord, we are being disciplined so that we will not be condemned with the world.

1 Corinthians 5:4-5

When you are assembled in the name of our Lord Jesus and I am with you in spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus is present, hand this man over to Satan, so that the sinful nature may be destroyed and his spirit saved on the day of the Lord.

Ephesians 4:26-27

In your anger do not sin: Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold.

Whether you realize it or not, you have someone who is against you, the devil or adversary. He is continually trying to build a case against you before the throne so as to get you judged and turned over to him- to have access to your life. He follows you around, night and day, he brings thoughts to your mind and feelings to your body in order to bait and provoke you to sin. For what cause, to gather evidence, something he can use against you in court. The only power Satan has over people is through sin, when you remove the sin, Satan's power to afflict and oppress people is taken away. That is why when Jesus came, the greatest act of spiritual warfare against the devil was in paying the penalty for our sins! This left Satan without any legal claim to our lives, to kill, steal and destroy.

John 1:29-30- The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, "Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!"

Revelation 12:9-11

The great dragon was hurled down — that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him. Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: “Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ. For the accuser of our brothers, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down. They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; they did not love their lives so much as to shrink from death.”

The devil’s imps will follow you around with tape recorders so-to-speak, and I want you to know that anything you say, can and will be used against you in the high court of heaven! You have an adversary, and he is shrewder, craftier, more sharper and cunning than any prosecuting attorney you have ever seen or heard of. He has been building cases against human beings for century after century and he is very proficient at it. He knows what buttons to push, what levers to pull. He knows what to bring to you to get you to talk and say and do the wrong thing so he has got a case in order to get you judged and turned over to him.

I also want you to know, as a Christian, you are not without a defense. There has never been an attorney for the defense like this one- Jesus Christ! People talk about the best lawyers that money can buy, Jesus far exceeds them all; and it won’t cost you a dime to have Him on your defense! Jesus, our attorney has never lost a case- NEVER! However, He has had many that would not work with Him and call on Him to be their representative before the throne of God, the Judge of the universe. They opted to represent themselves and as a consequence, lost their own case!

When the devil is trying to mess with your life, put sickness off on you, ruin you financially, and oppress you with all kinds of trials, tests and temptations, Jesus is right there to give you legal counsel through the Word of God. The Bible is a legal book- it is God’s Will, Word and Law of the Covenant! When you take the witness stand of life, Jesus wants you to study the Word, and that is all you are to say- stick with the counsel of God’s Word, don’t add to it or deviate from it. It does not matter what the



circumstances look like, what you feel, what other people are saying or what the devil is whispering into your ear about how you are going to fail and not make it. Jesus is telling you, only let His Word come out of your mouth- It is Written, like Jesus did when He was tempted according to Luke chapter 4. Jesus your advocate will tell you, whatever happens hold fast to the confession of God’s Word, the Bible is your testimony- just speak the Word! When you sit upon the witness stand and the devil comes up to cross examine you, to pressure you, just stay cool, and stand fast to your

testimony of what God’s Word says about you. In light of redemption and all that Jesus has already done on your behalf, how does God see you? Innocent, not guilty by the blood of Jesus. All of us as Christians are on the witness stand every day of our life. What comes out of our mouths will determine the outcome, whether we side with Jesus and the Word or concede to the devil and his false accusations.

Hebrews 4:14 AMP

Inasmuch then as we have a great High Priest Who has [already] ascended and passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession [of faith in Him].

Hebrews 10:23 AMP

So let us seize and hold fast and retain without wavering the hope we cherish and confess and our acknowledgement of it, for He Who promised is reliable (sure) and faithful to His word.

The devil will come, and as slick as he is will say, “Now you love the Lord don’t you? Committed to the Lord, because of all He has done for you. But isn’t it true, when the Lord has done so much for you, how miserably you have failed Him. Isn’t it true that you told Him you were going to do something for Him and you didn’t keep your commitment.” Next the devil will play a video for the court and replay what happened, and how you broke your promise. He will rewind it and play it again a few times, just to drive the point home. What the devil wants to do, is to get you to break under pressure and use examples



in an attempt to pour on the condemnation in order to convince you of how unworthy you are. This will keep on until you begin to cave into the pressure and whine, cry, give in and speak those fateful words like, “I know, I am just a sorry Christian, a failure, I will never get this thing right in my life.” In so doing you have condemned yourself and pleaded guilty through an admission of defeat. The devil will say, “Because of your many failures and sins, you deserve to be sick, you deserve to be poor, don’t you?” and we all have been guilty of responding, “Yes, I know I do, how can God love me, I mess up so

many times. I don’t deserve for God to heal me and bless me in my life or listen to my prayers.” Then the devil looks up and says, “Your honor I rest my case.” Unfortunately, your Father God has no option, since you have plead guilty, said you deserved it or accepted it in your life as a trial to keep you humble and repentant. God has no option than to bang the gavel and proclaim you guilty according to your own testimony, to allow your own words to be fulfilled and allow the enemy access to you. Matthew 9:29, *“According to your faith will it be done to you.”*

Mt. 12:37- For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.

Anything you say on this earth, can and will be used against you by the accuser of the brethren, the devil. The good news is, if you will do what your Advocate tells you to do and follow His counsel in His Word, you will win the case every time. Just stay cool; so what does the Bible say about your sins?

1 John 1:9-10

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. If we claim we have not sinned, we make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.

Psalms 103:11-12- For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us.

Hebrews 10:17- Their sins and lawless acts I will remember no more.

Just Stay Cool In Christ and Maintain Your Confession of God’s Word!

In light of the blood of Jesus, His death, burial and resurrection, as a believer, when you confess your sins according to 1 John 1:9, are you still guilty of them? No, you are innocent. Are you still condemned and unworthy? Jesus made us worthy, holy and perfect in His righteousness before God for all eternity through His blood. I did not earn this standing with God by my own works, but through the blood of Jesus. So do you deserve healing or to be whipped with sickness, do you deserve to be punished or to be set free, do you deserve condemnation or to be filled with joy and peace? In Jesus we have been justified, so what we deserve is life and that more abundantly, not death- All by His Amazing Grace!

Hebrews 9:26

But now he has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself.

Hebrews 10:10, 22

And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. Let us draw near to God with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water.

Hebrews 13:12

And so Jesus also suffered outside the city gate to make the people holy through his own blood.

Romans 8:1-4

Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man, in order that the righteous requirements of the law might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the sinful nature but according to the Spirit.

So when the devil pressures you to confess that you deserve to be punished, plead the blood of Jesus, confess that you are innocent in Christ- innocent to all charges and accusations of the devil. That is how we overcome him according to Revelation 12:9-11. Standing on the blood of Jesus that cleanses you from all sin, but that is not all or enough to ensure your freedom. The second part is the word of your testimony- that is all Jesus has to work with on your case. What should your testimony be, speak what the Bible has already declared concerning your situation- you are righteous, holy, justified and sanctified in Jesus. Let the devil spew out all kinds of accusations about your life, just plead the blood and that makes you innocent- the devil can't touch or harm you- Praise God!

1 John 5:18-20

We know that anyone born of God does not continue to sin; the one who was born of God keeps him safe, and the evil one cannot harm him. We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. We know also that the Son of God has come and has given us understanding, so that we may know him who is true. And we are in him who is true — even in his Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life.

1 John 5:18 AMP

We know [absolutely] that anyone born of God does not [deliberately and knowingly] practice committing sin, but the One Who was begotten of God carefully watches over and protects him [Christ's divine presence within him preserves him against the evil], and the wicked one does not lay hold (get a grip) on him or touch [him].

However, when you claim your innocence, the devil will say, “You rascal you, I have proof that you sinned and messed up!” Then he will pull for that video of those past wrongs, and find it’s blank, the blood of Jesus erased it! Desperate, the devil reaches for some pictures and cassette tapes, but they are blank as well. NO EVIDENCE! You look back at the devil and say, “ What video, I don’t see anything! I told you I’m innocent, I plead the blood of Jesus, I don’t plead guilty! I am holding onto my testimony of the truth that is in the Word of God!” The devil will keep on trying to get you to contradict the Bible and speak what you see, feel and hear instead of siding with revelation truth. But if you stand your ground and hold fast to your confession of faith, God the Father will say to the devil, “That is enough, give up, you have no case against my child!”

Then your advocate, Jesus will step forward and say, “Your honor, my Father, the accused, my brother, your son has testified that he is innocent of all charges, that he deserves no punishment, no sickness or death. I submit for the court’s consideration, exhibit A, My blood on the Mercy Seat in Heaven and My blood is speaking some wonderful things! My blood is speaking innocent, sins paid in full, no guilt, no shame and no oppression from the enemy is allowed!” The Father God will smile and say, “The court has accepted that evidence.” Next your advocate will say, “You have heard the accused, my brother, your son testify, that he does not deserve to be sick, but that by My stripes he is healed. I present before the court for its consideration, Exhibit B, the stripes upon my back.” The Father God will smile and say, “The court has accepted that evidence long ago.” Finally Jesus will say, “I submit that all charges against this one be dropped, he is innocent and that no judgment from the devil come against him and no access be allowed the destroyer to him.” The Father will then bang His gavel and proclaim, “This case is closed!”

Hebrews 12:24

To Jesus the mediator of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that speaks a better word than the blood of Abel.

Hebrews 3:1

Therefore, holy brothers, who share in the heavenly calling, fix your thoughts on Jesus, the apostle and high priest whom we confess.

Hebrews 4:14 NKJV

Seeing then that we have a great High Priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession.

Jesus is continually interceding, legally pleading our case, but He has to have something to work with- the word of our testimony is critical. How many of you know if you stand in any court of law and confess that you are guilty as sin and deserve to be punished, no matter how good your defense attorney is, there is nothing left than to be sentenced and receive your punishment. Another way the devil gains entrance in your life is to deceive you into accepting sickness, poverty, depression and other forms of satanic oppression. How does he do that you may ask? Through religious traditions, that the curse is sent from God or allowed by God to teach you something or keep you humble. In either case, as much as Jesus wants to deliver you, He can’t because of the wrong religious thinking or loose lips to concede defeat and guilt.

Remember, Satan is trying to get you condemned and judged so he can have access to you. He must get the permission- seeks whom he may devour! If you agree with his lies and plead guilty- yes I am sick, yes this trial is from God to teach me something, I accept it. There is nothing Jesus can do for you, so God has to allow the devil to kill, steal and destroy your life. But if you stick to the Bible, the devil has no evidence and no basis for judgment against you so you go free!

The Father will bang the gavel and proclaim, “Innocent, all charges against you are dropped!” The Father will throw the case out of court cause the devil has nothing on you because the blood of Jesus covered all the evidence and erased it all! The devil will stomp out, but he can’t touch you because you are innocent and you agree to stand by your innocence in the blood of Jesus; by making the truth of God’s word your testimony! That is how the truth makes us free, by personally identifying with it and making it our very own. The devil can’t touch you because he could not get a judgment made against you. This is what happens to believers everyday of their lives on this earth. The sooner we understand this legal process in the spiritual realm, the sooner we can enter into the experiential reality of God’s victory personalized in our lives for us to enjoy.

Psalms 23:5 AMP

You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies. You anoint my head with oil; my [brimming] cup runs over.

John 10:10 AMP

The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).

With all this said, what are we going to do, stay cool and stand on God’s Word and only speak out of our mouths the testimony of God’s Word concerning who we are in Christ. If that is the case, only the Word as our confession, nothing more, nothing less, we will win every case against the devil with Jesus as our Great Advocate and the Blood that cleanses us from all unrighteousness!

Unit 4 Review:

What are the four baptisms that the Bible teaches in Hebrews 6:2?

Why is an understanding of the Body of Christ so important to understanding authority?

Why is Fellowship with God so important?

What does the Bible teach in regards to God passing out judgment upon Christians?

What is significant about the Bible using legal terms concerning the Kingdom of God?

When on trial so-to-speak in daily life, what is the key for us winning our case?

III. The Name of Jesus

1. Man and Miracles

When reason takes the place of the miraculous, Christianity loses its vitality, fascination and fruitfulness. Christianity is not a religion, it is the very life of God in man. There could not be a religion that would appeal to humanity that was not founded upon miracles and propagated by miracles. Man craves a miracle working God today. Man wants a living God, he craves a miracle working God. The deep seated hunger in the human heart for God is the reason for all religions. If we take the supernatural out of Christianity, we have a religion.

1 Peter 1:18-20

For you know that it was not with perishable things such as silver or gold that you were redeemed from the empty way of life handed down to you from your forefathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, a lamb without blemish or defect.

Miracles operating through a person, whether true or false, will draw a greater congregation than the greatest philosopher or statesman in the world. This love for the miraculous is not a mark of ignorance but rather an outreaching after the unseen God. Education does not eliminate the desire for the miraculous in man. That desire is intensified, as education unveils man's weakness in the presence of the laws of nature and shows him his utter dependence upon the unseen. The religion of humanism and secularism leaves people empty, confused and hungry for the living bread and water that only satisfies Jesus. It is not a mark of great scholarship, piety or mental acumen to deny the miraculous.

1 Corinthians 1:17

For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel — not with words of human wisdom, lest the cross of Christ be emptied of its power.

1 Corinthians 1:20-25

Where is the wise man? Where is the scholar? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? For since in the wisdom of God the world through its wisdom did not know him, God was pleased through the foolishness of what was preached to save those who believe. Jews demand miraculous signs and Greeks look for wisdom, but we preach Christ crucified: a stumbling block to Jews and foolishness to Gentiles, but to those whom God has called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God. For the foolishness of God is wiser than man's wisdom, and the weakness of God is stronger than man's strength.

Men are easily deceived by pseudo miracle workers because of this hunger after the supernatural. One of America's greatest psychologists, who ridiculed the miraculous for over thirty years in his class room at one of the leading universities, finally sat at the feet of the high priestess of Spiritualism and confessed over his own signature in a popular magazine that at last he had found faith in the supernatural. What a pitiable picture! Turning from the miracle working Jesus to the miracle working Satan.

2 Corinthians 11:13-15

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. Their end will be what their actions deserve.

God created man in His own image and in His own likeness, and through Jesus Christ allows him to become a partaker of His own nature. This lifts man into the realm of God, and in that realm the Father God can unveil Himself to His child. The answer to the universal cravings of man for the supernatural is found in the new birth, being baptized with the Holy Spirit and the Name of Jesus.

1 Corinthians 4:20- For the kingdom of God is not a matter of talk but of power.

We crave the manifest presence of the Spirit in our church services. A dry, dead meeting has no drawing power. However, a service where men are being richly blessed in the unfolding of Scripture or the saving of souls, the healing of the sick, or the filling with the Spirit, has tremendous drawing power. An outpouring of the Spirit is a challenge to a community anytime. All normal men crave the supernatural; they long to see the manifestation of the power of God and to feel the thrill of the touch of the unseen.

1 Corinthians 2:1-5

When I came to you, brothers, I did not come with eloquence or superior wisdom as I proclaimed to you the testimony about God. For I resolved to know nothing while I was with you except Jesus Christ and him crucified. I came to you in weakness and fear, and with much trembling. My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the Spirit's power, so that your faith might not rest on men's wisdom, but on God's power.

Man was created by a miracle working God, so that miracle element is in man. Man yearns to perform miracles and live in the atmosphere of the supernatural. This miracle element in man has made him an inventor, discoverer, and investigator. It has caused him to experiment until he has made achievements in various fields of science. Sin dethroned man from the miracle realm, but through God's grace, we are being reacquainted into the realm of glory, the realm of God and the Name of Jesus.

John 4:24- "God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth."

Philippians 3:20-21

But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from there, the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the power that enables him to bring everything under his control, will transform our lowly bodies so that they will be like his glorious body.

1 Peter 2:11-12

Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul.

It has been foreign for us to grasp the principles of this strange life of faith. While sin made us workers and slaves, grace makes us trust and rest. In the beginning before Adam fell, man's spirit was the dominate force in the world, of his own triune being- spirit, soul and body. When he sinned, his mind became dominate- sin dethroned the spirit and crowned the intellect. However, the Grace of God is restoring the spirit of man to its place of dominion over one's life. When man comes to recognize the dominance of the spirit, he will live in the realm of the supernatural without effort. No longer will faith be a struggle and a fight but an unconscious reality, living in the realm of God- as automatic as breathing.

Romans 8:13-14

For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live, because those who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God.

The heart or spirit of man craves the touch of a supernatural relationship with Almighty God. Nothing in the natural or intellectual realms can satisfy the cries of the heart. The things of this world may provide temporary happiness, but it always leaves people empty and crying out for more. Only God can fill the spiritual void of the heart. The love for the miraculous is in man.

The spirit of man cannot be analyzed or classified by the mind; it is above the mind, as God is above the physical nature. Man's intellect is ever conscious of supernatural forces about him that he cannot understand or interpret; perhaps, that is the reason why man longs to perform miracles. Unfortunately, Satan offers people what I call lying miracles and deceptive signs; phenomenon like psychics, mediums, witchcraft and the occult. Just consider the popularity of Harry Potter and Disney's inordinate fascination with magic- it sells!

Matthew 24:24-25

For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect — if that were possible. See, I have told you ahead of time.

Revelation 16:13-14

Then I saw three evil spirits that looked like frogs; they came out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and they go out to the kings of the whole world, to gather them for the battle on the great day of God Almighty.

Yes Satan is a powerful spiritual being, but is nothing compared to the power of the Lord God Almighty! A good example is when God sent Moses and Aaron to Pharaoh. The only commodity that moved men in those times was supernatural power. The magicians of Satan could only mimic the signs produced by Moses up to a point.

1 Chronicles 16:25-27

For great is the Lord and most worthy of praise; he is to be feared above all gods. For all the gods of the nations are idols, but the Lord made the heavens. Splendor and majesty are before him; strength and joy in his dwelling place.



Exodus 8:16-19

Then the Lord said to Moses, “Tell Aaron, ‘Stretch out your staff and strike the dust of the ground,’ and throughout the land of Egypt the dust will become gnats.” They did this, and when Aaron stretched out his hand with the staff and struck the dust of the ground, gnats came upon men and animals. All the dust throughout the land of Egypt became gnats. But when the magicians tried to produce gnats by their secret arts, they could not. And the gnats were on men and animals. The magicians said to Pharaoh,

“This is the finger of God.” But Pharaoh's heart was hard and he would not listen, just as the Lord had said.

Acts 8:9-13

Now for some time a man named Simon had practiced sorcery in the city and amazed all the people of Samaria. He boasted that he was someone great, and all the people, both high and low, gave him their attention and exclaimed, “This man is the divine power known as the Great Power.” They followed him because he had amazed them for a long time with his magic. But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Simon himself believed and was baptized. And he followed Philip everywhere, astonished by the great signs and miracles he saw.



Signs and wonders have a way of getting folks attention. Remember when Jesus had healed the blind man, it was a calling card from God to humanity, to get their attention. Atheists can't deny it, secular humanists want to ignore it, but this is God up close and personal in our faces in full manifestation. He is real and Lord and commands that men everywhere to repent. The power of God on display in the Name of Jesus gives credibility to the Gospel message, its God's Divine authenticity and stamp of approval. No other dead religion or philosophy of man can stand up against it- it becomes a no brainer for people. This stark reality forces a response in people to accept Jesus or reject Him, no more wishy-washy wavering in doubt. The choice becomes clear in the face of God's raw power on display! This is Biblical Christianity as it was birthed on the Day of Pentecost in power and fire that would blow the world away.

John 9:30-33

The man answered, “Now that is remarkable! You don't know where Jesus comes from, yet he opened my eyes. We know that God does not listen to sinners. He listens to the godly man who does his will. Nobody has ever heard of opening the eyes of a man born blind. If this man were not from God, he could do nothing.”

Acts 8:6-8

When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, **they all paid close attention to what he said.** With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city.

Consider Elijah and the 450 prophets of Baal; it came down to a showdown between Satan and the God of Israel. Folks are looking for signs and wonders or proof of the existence of God. What pleases God is faith in His Word. We find during Old Testament times, God was manifesting Himself more in the natural realm to spiritually dead people. John 20:29, “*Then Jesus told him, ‘Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.’*”

Matthew 16:1-4

The Pharisees and Sadducees came to Jesus and tested him by asking him to show them a sign from heaven. He replied, “When evening comes, you say, ‘It will be fair weather, for the sky is red,’ and in the morning, ‘Today it will be stormy, for the sky is red and overcast.’ You know how to interpret the appearance of the sky, but you cannot interpret the signs of the times. A wicked and adulterous generation looks for a miraculous sign, but none will be given it except the sign of Jonah.” Jesus then left them and went away.



1 Kings 18:22-39

Then Elijah said to them, “I am the only one of the Lord’s prophets left, but Baal has four hundred and fifty prophets. Get two bulls for us. Let them choose one for themselves, and let them cut it into pieces and put it on the wood but not set fire to it. I will prepare the other bull and put it on the wood but not set fire to it. Then you call on the name of your god, and I will call on the name of the Lord. The god who answers by fire — he is God.” Then all the people said, “What you say is good.” Elijah said to the prophets of Baal, “Choose one of the bulls and prepare it first, since there are so many of you. Call on the name of your god, but do not light the fire.” So they took the bull given them and prepared it. Then they called on the name of Baal from morning till noon. “O Baal, answer us!” they shouted. But there was no response; no one answered. And they danced around the altar they had made. At noon Elijah began to taunt them. “Shout louder!” he said. “Surely he is a god! Perhaps he is

deep in thought, or busy, or traveling. Maybe he is sleeping and must be awakened.” So they shouted louder and slashed themselves with swords and spears, as was their custom, until their blood flowed. Midday passed, and they continued their frantic prophesying until the time for the evening sacrifice. But there was no response, no one answered, no one paid attention.

Then Elijah said to all the people, “Come here to me.” They came to him, and he repaired the altar of the Lord, which was in ruins. Elijah took twelve stones, one for each of the tribes descended from Jacob, to whom the word of the Lord had come, saying, “Your name shall be Israel.” With the stones he built an altar in the name of the Lord, and he dug a trench around it large enough to hold two seahs of seed. He arranged the wood, cut the bull into pieces and laid it on the wood. Then he said to them, “Fill four large jars with water and pour it on the offering and on the wood.” “Do it again,” he said, and they did it again. “Do it a third time,” he ordered, and they did it the third time. The water ran down around the altar and even filled the trench.

At the time of sacrifice, the prophet Elijah stepped forward and prayed: “O Lord, God of Abraham, Isaac and Israel, let it be known today that you are God in Israel and that I am your servant and have done all these things at your command. Answer me, O Lord, answer me, so these people will know that you, O Lord, are God, and that you are turning their hearts back again.” Then the fire of the Lord fell and burned up the sacrifice, the wood, the stones and the soil, and also licked up the water in the trench. When all the people saw this, they fell prostrate and cried, “The Lord—he is God! The Lord—he is God!”

Certainly Christianity is about faith and trust in an unseen God, but this same God has no problems with making Himself known in a very outward, powerful manner in signs wonders and miracles! The curiosity for the miraculous is deep-seated in man. Man was brought into being by a miracle-working God and man will ever yearn to work miracles.

This is why we exalt super-human achievements and athletic accomplishments, we want to see and experience great things- the hunger and desire for it is there. We even have “miracle” drugs, cleaners; the term is ingrained in humans. The thirst for something more continues to drive humanity, to take them beyond the norm- hence steroids and performance enhancement drugs are so popular. This desire has fueled the notion of aliens from outer space and extraterrestrials. Man knows instinctively that there is more to this life than what we see, know and have become accustomed to. The supernatural realm is really man’s realm. Sin has blinded man and kept him from finding the secret door that would lead him back to his original exalted place. Thank God for Jesus, for He is the Door that opens up to us eternal life and a restored relationship with God.

John 10:7-10 NKJV

Then Jesus said to them again, “Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture. The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.

Is there a miracle element in Christianity today? Did the miracles end with the death of the early apostles? If miracles originated with the early church, if they authored and created signs and wonders on their own, then sure, when they died so did their handiwork. But wait a minute, signs, wonders and miracles are the work of God not of man and they have been in operation since the beginning of time. For miracles to cease, God would have to cease. As a result, it is ludicrous and ignorance to espouse that God does not perform miracles anymore. God has not changed nor has the Word of God, the problem is that man has tried to change God, and He won’t change. God is a miracle working God, always has been and always will be, it is His calling card to get our attention.

Hebrews 13:8- Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever.

1 Samuel 15:29

“He who is the Glory of Israel does not lie or change his mind; for he is not a man, that he should change his mind.”

Mark 13:31- Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.

Hebrews 2:1-4

We must pay more careful attention, therefore, to what we have heard, so that we do not drift away. For if the message spoken by angels was binding, and every violation and disobedience received its just punishment, how shall we escape if we ignore such a great salvation? This salvation, which was first announced by the Lord, was confirmed to us by those who heard him. God also testified to it by signs, wonders and various miracles, and gifts of the Holy Spirit distributed according to his will.

Why has the Church declined you may say, simple it is an abandonment from following the Word of God. It takes humility to submit and follow the teachings of Jesus Christ and the Bible. Man in his arrogance and pride gets his hands on what is sacred and messes with it by adding to and taking away from divine revelation in God’s Word. This effectively neutralizes the power inherent in God’s Word and reduces Christianity to another man-made religion of human reasoning and traditions. Modernism dominates many churches today to where they accept homosexuality in positions of ministry and marriage.

Their denial of the supernatural element in the Church reduces them to a mere ethical religion. It really is a sad commentary that God is not moving in their midst. It reminds me of Ezekiel chapters 9-11 which describes how the glory of the Lord departed from Israel due to their grievous sins and unrepentant hearts. The lights of these churches may be on, but God is not home in their midst.



Ezekiel 9:3-4

Now the glory of the God of Israel went up from above the cherubim, where it had been, and moved to the threshold of the temple. Then the Lord called to the man clothed in linen who had the writing kit at his side and said to him, “Go throughout the city of Jerusalem and put a mark on the foreheads of those who grieve and lament over all the detestable things that are done in it.”

Mark 7:6-9

He replied, “Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written: ‘These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.’ You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men.” And he said to them: “You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions!”

2 Timothy 3:5- Having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them.

1 Corinthians 1:17

For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel — not with words of human wisdom, lest the cross of Christ be emptied of its power.

On the other hand, we have those who are contending for an original, miraculous element in Christianity, but declaring that miracles ceased with the death of the apostles; that Christianity does not need the miraculous today to convince men of the authenticity of the gospel message. God is not going to sanction a man-made philosophy with signs and wonders, that is reserved for the simplicity of preaching of His Word and not ours! Since the message did not change, neither does God in confirming it with signs and wonders. The partnership between Jesus and His Church; we preach His Word, and He confirms His Words with signs and wonders- this is for the entire dispensation of Grace or the Church Age that we live in today!

Mark 16:20

Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Then we have a third group of people who claim miracles are still being performed, the sick are healed, prayers are answered, mountains are being moved, and that God is a living reality in the daily life of the believer. Honestly, if folks had a choice between dry religious traditions and fresh power of God in manifestation, which of the two do you think they will choose? We need to realize, we don't need to twist God's hand to move in our midst, He wants to, but we must follow His Word and the Spirit in the Name of Jesus. If we submit to God's Word and His ways, God will move in our midst, for He only Honors His Word and the Name of Jesus- Period! Too many ministers and churches want to control things and maintain their definition of order and respectability. Many seeker friendly approaches have been adopted, well intentioned, but folks just want to experience God in all His raw power and glory!

1 Corinthians 14:1, 39

Follow the way of love and eagerly desire spiritual gifts, especially the gift of prophecy. Therefore, my brothers, be eager to prophesy, and do not forbid speaking in tongues.



We have lost the supernatural element out of Christianity in many churches who are clinging with trembling hands to a historical Jesus that has no power to heal the sick and no ability to meet daily needs. The spirit of real evangelism is almost a thing of the past- power evangelism that is! We cannot blame the cults and occult that is growing in popularity around our country. It is a protest of the people against modern, dead, theologically dry ministries that dominate many denominations. A dead orthodoxy has no resurrection power within it- no miracle working force back of it. Nothing but a return to our supernatural God of Miracles will save our land and nation.

Jesus attracted the multitudes by miracles and He still does today through His Body of believers.

Luke 6:17-19

He went down with them and stood on a level place. A large crowd of his disciples was there and a great number of people from all over Judea, from Jerusalem, and from the coast of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and to be healed of their diseases. Those troubled by evil spirits were cured, and the people all tried to touch him, because power was coming from him and healing them all.

Mark 3:7-12

Jesus withdrew with his disciples to the lake, and a large crowd from Galilee followed. When they heard all he was doing, many people came to him from Judea, Jerusalem, Idumea, and the regions across the Jordan and around Tyre and Sidon. Because of the crowd he told his disciples to have a small boat ready for him, to keep the people from crowding him. For he had healed many, so that those with diseases were pushing forward to touch him. Whenever the evil spirits saw him, they fell down before him and cried out, "You are the Son of God." But he gave them strict orders not to tell who he was.

Bottom line, what we need in the Church today is a concentrated and deliberate effort to train and develop the spirit of the believer in godliness, faith and love. To become full of the Word and the Spirit so as to imitate our Heavenly Father and walk as Jesus did. Our spirits need to become so strong in the Lord and in the power of His Might to where it gains the ascendancy over the mind and body. Then we can be in a place to function as a true ambassador of Christ, a minister of reconciliation, a man and woman of God in a dark and depraved world that is in desperate need of Jesus, displayed in truthful speech and the power of God.

1 Thessalonians 1:4-5

For we know, brothers loved by God, that he has chosen you, because our gospel came to you not simply with words, but also with power, with the Holy Spirit and with deep conviction.

2 Corinthians 6:7

In truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left.

Romans 1:16-17

I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile. For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: “The righteous will live by faith.”

Through all the ages, it has been a battle of the supernatural versus the intellectual. The God of miracles is the Creator of mankind, and when we eliminate the miraculous, we take away the heart and soul of Christianity. This is why we are teaching on the subject of the Authority of the Believer and The Name of Jesus. We need more godly examples in our generation today like Stephen.

Acts 6:5, 8

This proposal pleased the whole group. They chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit. Now Stephen, a man full of God’s grace and power, did great wonders and miraculous signs among the people.

We too can be men and women of God charged with the power of God and doing great exploits in the Name of Jesus- will we accept the call!

2. How Jesus obtained a more excellent Name: Inheritance, Bestowal, and Conquest

I need to point out that names in the Bible are really significant because they are titles of authority that point to a particular office and represent great achievements or victories- they serve a function not just a means of giving honor. A person’s name represents a person, names have meanings and shed light as to their character and destiny. This is why the study of the Name of Jesus is so essential for the believer to understand and grasp. When we learn about the Name of Jesus we will come to understand the person of Jesus through His great and powerful Name!

According to Hebrews 1:4 Jesus had inherited a more excellent or superior Name than any angel as the First Begotten Son- the first born again from spiritual death when God raised Jesus from the dead. Jesus was begotten of God, because He had become as we were, separated from God, tasted spiritual death for every person- taken on the nature of Satan and sin. Jesus became what we were so we can become what He is. Jesus had tasted of death for all of us, all forms of death, physical, spiritual and in hell- Hebrews 2:9, *“So that by the grace of God he might taste death for everyone.”* Jesus had died spiritually with our sin, He became sin with our sin according to 2 Corinthians 5:21, *“God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.”* Jesus was the first one to experience the New Birth as a pattern for all of us who would be born again after Him. This is total identification with us in our sin and in turn with His righteousness- full circle!

Colossians 1:18- And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy.

Revelation 1:4-5

Grace and peace to you from him who is, and who was, and who is to come, and from the seven spirits before his throne, and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth.

Hebrews 1:4-6

So he became as much superior to the angels as the name he has inherited is superior to theirs. For to which of the angels did God ever say, “You are my Son; today I have become your Father”? Or again, “I will be his Father, and he will be my Son”? And again, when God brings his firstborn into the world, he says, “Let all God’s angels worship him.”

Jesus is God as much as the Father and the Holy Spirit. The incarnation of Jesus was God as a spirit being, taking on a human body; which He will live in for all eternity as a reminder for us, along with the scars. When the Word became flesh, God took on a new name, “Son of Man”- used 86 times in the New Testament. I make this point because cults will twist the Scriptures and imply that Jesus is a created being. In their natural minds, they interpret “Son of God” and the word “Begotten” as Jesus being inferior to God the Father. Jesus humbled Himself to become a man by choice, it was required in order to purchase our redemption. After the resurrection, God the Father restored back to Jesus His divine faculties of being all knowing, all powerful and everywhere at the same time- His Glory as Son of God.

Matthew 1:21-23

“She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.” All this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: “The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel”-which means, “God with us.”

Philippians 2:6-8

Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, but **made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, **being made in human likeness**. And being found in appearance as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient to death — even death on a cross!**

Acts 7:55-56

But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked up to heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. “Look,” he said, “I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God.”

1 Timothy 2:5-6

For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave himself as a ransom for all men.

As a man Jesus defeated the devil who had dominion over mankind. This is the only way it could be done and necessitated the Virgin Birth. Satan had legal claim over humanity because of sin, for it was a man that had got them into this predicament (Adam) and it would also take a man (Jesus) to get them out, but not just any man. This man had to be perfect in life, without any sin in order to become the scapegoat or substitute to bare away our sins as God’s justice requires. Seems impossible for any regular human being to match up to such a measure of perfection doesn’t it?

Matthew 19:23-26

Then Jesus said to his disciples, “I tell you the truth, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.” When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and asked, “Who then can be saved?” Jesus looked at them and said, “With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.”

You see, Jesus was stating quite emphatically that it was impossible for man to save himself because he was born into sin due to Adam's transgression. It required outside intervention, but of a kind that would require God becoming man to identify with man. Satan could not challenge God on a legal basis, since Jesus was subjected to all temptations as we were, and qualified to be this perfect man to die on behalf of mankind- this is what we call apples to apples.

Hebrews 4:15-16

For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are — yet was without sin.

God taking on humanity to die on behalf of humanity was required. This made what Jesus did all legal, God's justice is satisfied by the sacrifice of Jesus and we go free from Satan's tyranny- God's Grace is certainly amazing! Note to self, when God makes the rules, He plays by them. Divinity does not excuse God from violating His own laws or contradicting Himself. Our God practices what He preaches!

Genesis 3:15

“And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel.”

John 1:1-2, 14

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. **The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.**

Romans 5:12-14

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned— for before the law was given, sin was in the world. But sin is not taken into account when there is no law. Nevertheless, death reigned from the time of Adam to the time of Moses, even over those who did not sin by breaking a command, as did Adam, **who was a pattern of the one to come.**

Jesus is referred to in the Bible as the “Last Adam” because where the first Adam failed, the last one, Jesus succeeded- 1 Corinthians 15:45, *“So it is written: ‘The first man Adam became a living being’; the last Adam, a life-giving spirit.”*

Hebrews 2:10-18

In bringing many sons to glory, it was fitting that God, for whom and through whom everything exists, should make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering. **Both the one who makes men holy and those who are made holy are of the same family. So Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers He says, “I will declare your name to my brothers; in the presence of the congregation I will sing your praises.” And again, “I will put my trust in him.” And again he says, “Here am I, and the children God has given me.” Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death — that is, the devil— and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death. **For surely it is not angels he helps, but Abraham's descendants.** For this reason he had to be made like his brothers in every way, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people. Because he himself suffered when he was tempted, he is able to help those who are being tempted.**

Galatians 3:26-29

You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

So, Jesus inherited a greater Name than any angelic being, having become like us as the Son of God, we too are called sons of God. Jesus is our creator God, but through His humanity, He also became our Elder brother according to the Scriptures in order to elevate us- Hebrews 2:11. It was all for our benefit, so we would be restored to our former glory before Adam's fall- God is so Good!

Since Jesus paid the price for sin and satisfied God's justice, Satan lost his authority and power over our lives, Jesus is now our Lord and Master and He conquered Satan and all his hosts. This includes all the devil's works and devices of sin, sickness, poverty and all forms of oppression- death and destruction.

The sin problem was settled and man's redemption a fact, obtained and accomplished. Remember on the cross Jesus cried out "My God, My God why have you forsaken me." Jesus became what we were, spiritual dead, taken on our sin nature, became separated from God. His spirit, not just His body paid the penalty for sin. Sin is not just a physical thing and cannot be paid by just mere physical action, its roots are in the spiritual realm- sure it manifests in the natural, but its origin is spiritual. Isaiah 53:9 in the Hebrew the word "Death" is plural, as in deaths- Jesus tasted death for us. Remember, this is spiritual death, where Satan had dominated, not physical death. Now Jesus has the keys of death and hell.

It is God's will that we come to the realization and receive spiritual revelation concerning the Name of Jesus and what it means for us today. Through the resurrection from the dead, Jesus had triumphed over the enemy in every sense of the word. Jesus has been exalted above every name that is named. Jesus reigns supreme over all the powers of darkness, for they tried to keep Jesus down in hell indefinitely, but as the old saying goes, "You just can't keep a good man down!" Once the claims of God's justice concerning our sins were satisfied and paid in full, God the Father declared "That's enough!" Reached down from heaven and with a mighty arm of strength took hold of Jesus and raised Him up from the dead. Even though all of Satan's power was resisting the resurrection, he no longer had any hold on Jesus, but was cast aside, put to naught, vanquished, spoiled, stripped, paralyzed, and humiliated.

Colossians 2:13-15 AMP

And you who were dead in trespasses and in the uncircumcision of your flesh (your sensuality, your sinful carnal nature), [God] brought to life together with [Christ], having [freely] forgiven us all our transgressions, having cancelled and blotted out and wiped away the handwriting of the note (bond) with its legal decrees and demands which was in force and stood against us (hostile to us). This [note with its regulations, decrees, and demands] He set aside and cleared completely out of our way by nailing it to [His] cross. [God] **disarmed the principalities and powers that were ranged against us and made a bold display and public example of them, in triumphing over them in Him and in it [the cross].**

The name stands for the person; what Jesus is the Name represents! The Church needs a fresh revelation of the awesome glory invested in the Name of Jesus- the Spirit of wisdom and revelation that we may see, know and speak the Name of Jesus. We have a rich inheritance wrapped up in the Name of Jesus.

Revelation 19:16

On his robe and on his thigh he has this name written: KING OF kings and LORD OF lords.

Ephesians 1:17-23

I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better. I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in the saints, and his incomparably great power for us who believe. That power is like the working of his mighty strength, which he exerted in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms, far above all rule and authority, power and dominion, and every title that can be given, not only in the present age but also in the one to come. And God placed all things under his feet and appointed him to be head over everything for the church, which is his body, the fullness of him who fills everything in every way.

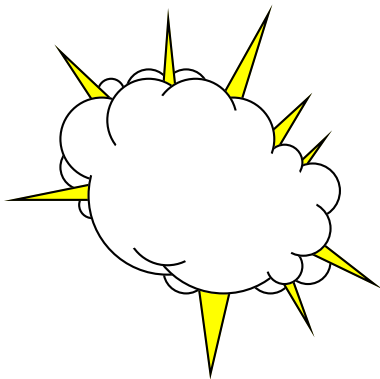
These are the same principalities and powers in Ephesians 6:10 that were reduced to nothing. That is why in Mark 16:17, we can cast out demons, lay hands on the sick, and bring freedom to the captives, all in the Name.

Acts 2:29 - “will not leave His soul in hell...” David speaking by the Spirit spoke of the resurrection of Jesus. We will not understand the authority in the Name of Jesus until we know that Jesus satisfied the claims of justice, dying as our substitute. God the Father said that was enough and raised Jesus up from the dead. That is when Jesus was begotten of the Father; that is the day Jesus by inheritance obtained the most excellent Name. God conferred upon Jesus a name that is above every name, because of His achievements in His death, burial and resurrection.

Colossians 1:9-14

For this reason, since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of his will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding. And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God, being strengthened with all power according to his glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light. **For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves,** in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

We have been delivered from the authority of darkness. Satan has no authority to dominate the believer anymore; so God’s will for us is to put the devil on the run in Jesus Name.



The Name of Jesus is recognized in three worlds- Heaven, earth and hell. Angels, demons, and men must bow before that Name! If the Name of Jesus only belonged to the early church to do signs and wonders, than only salvation was available to the early church as well, because there is no Name under heaven given to men by which they must be saved, but by the Name of Jesus. So if the Name of Jesus is still available for mankind to be saved, then so are the signs and wonders to be exercised through the Church in Jesus Name! There is more than salvation in that Name- all the majesty and glory, His Name has lost none of its power or potency!

Philippians 2:9-11

Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

The inference in Philippians 2:9-11, is that there was a Name known in heaven, unknown elsewhere, and this Name was kept to be conferred upon someone who should merit it. Jesus, was given this Name, and at this Name every knee shall bow in the three worlds- Heaven, Earth and Hell- and every tongue will confess that He is Lord of the three worlds to the glory of God, the Father. Acts 4:12, *“Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved.”*

All that authority is wrapped up in the Name, when we speak it, it brings into reality all that Jesus accomplished. When we know what is back of that Name and what Jesus accomplished, power is released; not by parroting the Name without first having a revelation understanding of it in our spirit.

1 Corinthians 2:6-7

We do, however, speak a message of wisdom among the mature, but not the wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing.

The King James version of 1 Corinthians 2:6 states, *“the princes of this world, that come to naught.”* Moffats translation reads, *“the dethroned rulers of this world.”* Jesus really did the enemy in! Why then are so many Christians and churches being dominated by the devil? Simply put, either they do not know what belongs to them or they know it, but do not act like it's so. They take the Name of Jesus like a charm or rabbit foot. *“Perhaps if I speak the Name of Jesus it might work.”* There is a tremendous difference between trying and doing something. First, let's find out what is behind the Name of Jesus and then make it apart of every area of our life.

Colossians 3:17

And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

Jesus has already dethroned the devil 2000 years ago, not in the Millennium. The kingdom of darkness has no right to rule us anymore! The Name of Jesus stands for all His power and authority to enforce Satan's defeat over our lives. The Name works by knowing, not by wishing. Teaching of God's Word is the key in order to get the wisdom of God on this matter. John 8:31-32, *“Jesus said, ‘If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.’”*

Satan has been Paralyzed

As we have mentioned above, Colossians 1:15; 2:12-15 gives us a deeper view of Jesus' conquests over the Satanic forces just before He rose from the dead. Remember that His Name was conferred upon Him because of His conquest. The picture here is of Christ in the dark regions of the lost, in awful combat with the hosts of darkness. It gives us a glimpse of the tremendous battle and victory that Jesus won before He rose from the dead. The margin reads: *“Having put off from Himself, the principalities and powers.”* It is evident that the whole demon host, when they saw Jesus in their power simply intended to swamp Him, overwhelm Him as they held Him in fearful bondage. At least until the pronouncement came forth from the throne of God that Jesus had met the demands of justice; that the sin-problem was settled and man's redemption was a fact. When this declaration reached the dark regions, Jesus rose and hurled back the hosts of darkness, and met Satan in awful combat as described in Hebrews 2:14.

Hebrews 2:14-16

Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death — that is, the devil— and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.

Hebrews 2:14 Rotherham

“In order that through death He might paralyze him, that held the dominion of death, that is the devil.”

Jesus spoiled principalities and powers, the same dudes mentioned in Ephesians 6:10. Jesus made a show of them, parading them before heaven and earth- it's about time that we find out about it. Jesus triumphed and made a show of them through His death, burial and resurrection and seating at the right hand of the Father. Jesus' triumph is our triumph because we are seated with Him at the Father's right hand. Because we are in Christ we have as much authority and victory over the devil as Jesus does.



In other words, after Jesus had put off from Himself the demon forces and the awful burden of guilt, sin, and sickness that He carried with Him down there, He grappled with Satan. Jesus conquered him, and left him paralyzed, whipped and defeated. God the Father has stripped, spoiled, put to naught, defeated and paralyzed all of the enemy that tried to keep Jesus from being resurrected. In ancient times, when one king defeated another king, the defeated king would be publicly humiliated and paraded through city streets in a great show. The triumphant king would symbolically place his foot on the neck of his enemy signifying his total defeat. That is exactly what Jesus has done to the devil!

Here is another example for you. If you were to enter into the room of a house and there before you was a big ole 300 pound, muscular biker guy, all decked out with leather. He sits there just cursing you out and threatening you with all kind of harm and pain. Normally, you would be quite taken back and afraid, right? But suppose I were to come in right after you had entered the room and mentioned, “Oh, by the way, ole Butch here is paralyzed from the neck down, he's all talk and no action!” You would just laugh at him, because you know he does not have the power to back up his threats. But while you were ignorant of the fact that he was paralyzed, you might be afraid. In regards to the Christian who is in fellowship with God, the devil is a big bluff, a great actor, he comes as a roaring lion, but Jesus had already knocked all his teeth out. Jesus de-fanged and paralyzed him so we don't have to be afraid of him anymore. We do however have reason for concern if we venture out into his territory of unrepentant sin. If we hold onto unforgiveness or the practice of sinful habits, there is risk of harm- just don't go there my friend.

Luke 11:21-22

“When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own house, his possessions are safe. But when someone stronger attacks and overpowers him, he takes away the armor in which the man trusted and divides up the spoils.”

Jesus fulfilled Luke 11:21-22 in His death, burial and resurrection. So when Jesus rose from the dead, He not only had the keys of death and hell but he had the very armor in which Satan trusted. Jesus has defeated the devil and stripped him bare of all authority and dominion, power and claim over mankind through sin. Which in turn had opened the door for death or the work of Satan to kill, steal and destroy humanity. Jesus stands before the three worlds, heaven, earth and hell as the undisputed victor over man's ancient destroyer, Satan- like prize fighters in a boxing ring. He conquered Satan before his own cohorts, his own servants in the dark regions of the damned, and there He stood in that dreaded place, the absolute victor and Master.

Is it any wonder, that fresh from such tremendous victory, He should say to His disciples, "*All authority has been given to Me in heaven and in earth.*" Now we can understand what Philippians chapter 2 means that His Name is above every other name and every knee must bow. All this authority and power that was obtained by His mighty conquest is now invested in that Name. He stands as the Master and the Ruler of the Universe. All this authority and power that Jesus gained by His mighty conquest is in that Name and He has given that Name to us. The authority that He has won is delegated to us in the use of His Name. All He was, is in that Name; all He is today, is in that Name and that Name is ours.

Jesus was given that Name that He might give it to us. He gave His Name to us that we might carry out the will of the Father in this dispensation in which we are living. We know the early church utilized this authority. The early church acted for Jesus in His stead. They worked miracles and the miracles opened doors for ministry and service. It gave authenticity and authority to their credentials, a standing in the community where they preached- credibility to the message.

Acts 8:5-8

Philip went down to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Christ there. When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, they all paid close attention to what he said. With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city.

They lived and walked in the realm of the supernatural, it was normal, expected and a common reality. It was the days of God on the earth to the people where they ministered- let's realize that today in our generation!

Romans 5:17 AMP

For if because of one man's trespass (lapse, offense) death reigned through that one, much more surely will those who receive [God's] overflowing grace (unmerited favor) and the free gift of righteousness [putting them into right standing with Himself] reign as kings in life through the one Man Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).

In regards to Romans 5:17, where are we to reign? In heaven, in the sweet bye-and-bye, no it's talking about reigning in this life, now as kings through Jesus. God has made us to be more than conquerors and has given us the victory- Romans 8:37; 1 Corinthians 15:57. We are to dominate the circumstances, trials, tests and temptations in this life. Let's reign over sickness, poverty and any other kind of oppression- we are redeemed from the tyranny of the enemy! Let's stop the devil from cheating and stealing from our inheritance and the promises from God. Satan has no right or authority in our house and over our children. God's will for us is to rule in our life and house through Jesus Christ. We also need to help those who don't know these things!

Some well meaning Christians get all happy singing, “Here in life do I wonder as a beggar in the heat and the cold...precious Jesus don’t forget me...can’t expect much out of this life, but if I can just get in, and leave this valley of tears...” or quoting Job and sing “He gives and takes away...” We thought we were being humble when we sang, “just build me a cabin in the corner of glory land,” when all we were being was ignorant. People start crying, get happy and blessed over a lie- they sing it so much it becomes a truism. Let’s sing the Scriptures and stay with the Word!

Worthy is the Lamb who was slain!

Revelation Chapter 5

Then I saw in the right hand of him who sat on the throne a scroll with writing on both sides and sealed with seven seals. And I saw a mighty angel proclaiming in a loud voice, “Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?” But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth could open the scroll or even look inside it. I wept and wept because no one was found who was worthy to open the scroll or look inside. Then one of the elders said to me, “Do not weep! See, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed. He is able to open the scroll and its seven seals.”

Then I saw a Lamb, looking as if it had been slain, standing in the center of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders. He had seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent out into all the earth. He came and took the scroll from the right hand of him who sat on the throne. And when he had taken it, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. And they sang a new song:

**“You are worthy to take the scroll
and to open its seals,
because you were slain,
and with your blood you purchased men for God
from every tribe and language and people and nation.
You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God,
and they will reign on the earth.”**

Then I looked and heard the voice of many angels, numbering thousands upon thousands, and ten thousand times ten thousand. They encircled the throne and the living creatures and the elders. In a loud voice they sang:

**“Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain,
to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength
and honor and glory and praise!”**

Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing:

**“To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb
be praise and honor and glory and power,
forever and ever!”**

The four living creatures said, “Amen,” and the elders fell down and worshiped.

- Some men's names are great because they were born or inherited it, like a prince, royalty etc.
- Others obtain a great name because of achievements, conquests and victories they had obtained
- Still others obtain a great name because it was conferred upon them

The Name, Jesus is great because He inherited a great Name; His Name is great because of His achievements; He is great because a great Name was conferred upon Him.

When He rose from among the dead and stood triumphant over death, hell, Satan, disease and the grave, we stood with Him, for we are in Christ. Now, He gives to us the use of the Name that was conferred upon Him when He had accomplished this mighty work in satisfying the claims of justice, defeating Satan, and meeting the needs of humanity. He has put absolutely no limitation upon our use of that Name. The only question is, "Do I understand God's intentions in giving me the use of that Name?" We are not to use it as the ungodly use their good luck charms, but we are to use it in a business sense, the legal sense of the power of attorney. We use His Name representatively as ambassadors of Christ in the earth.

The sick and afflicted come to us, and healing virtue that is in Christ, that is in His finished work, is available to the sick one in that Name- Acts 3:16.

Here is a great confession that we can speak out loud concerning the Name of Jesus, "He has authorized me to use His Name against all of hell, demons, sin, sickness and oppression. In the Name of Jesus I am free, I am free today, right now. All His power and authority and might of all His conquests are invested in the Name of Jesus and that Name belongs to me. Therefore, I am more than a conqueror. So I take the Name! Jesus has given me the right to use His Name!"

We need to fully understand the significance of these truths and fully develop them in our spirit. Jesus has put all things under our feet. The least members of the Body of Christ, the heel or little toe has as much authority over the devil as the Head does. We have no less authority than the 12 apostles or the 72 disciples. Satan is the god of this world system, but not god over us!

3. The Name of Jesus- What is Behind it!

We must understand who Jesus is, see His standing in heaven, His achievements in the Plan of Redemption and the glory and honor that belongs to Him today as He sits at the Right Hand of the Majesty on High. If one is planning to use the Name of Jesus in prayer, praise and power evangelism, one needs to know the power invested in that Name which God esteems above every other name.

Speaking of the Deity of Jesus Christ, He is God the Son, equal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. Jesus is the God-Man, 100% God becoming 100% man. Even though He took on a flesh and blood body, having emptied Himself of all divine prerogatives (Philippians 2:5-8), the person of Jesus was, is and always will be God- Hebrews 13:8, "*Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever.*" John 8:58- "*I tell you the truth,*" *Jesus answered, "before Abraham was born, I am!"*

Hebrews 1:1-3

In the past God spoke to our forefathers through the prophets at many times and in various ways, but in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe. The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven.

Colossians 1:15-20

He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together. And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy. For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him, and through him to reconcile to himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross.

Jesus is the manifestation of the will of the Godhead upon the earth. God the Father appointed Jesus to be heir of all things. Who being the outshining of His very glory and the very image of His substance, upholding the Universe by the Word of His power- Hebrews 1:1-3. When Jesus had made a substitution for sins, and satisfied every claim of justice, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on High- the highest seat in the universe.

At the resurrection of Jesus, God the Father glorified the Son back to His original place of power, glory and majesty having humbled himself to the level of a servant, crucified and raised back to life forever more. Jesus is God, the Savior of our souls and the creator of the universe!

John 16:28

“I came from the Father and entered the world; now I am leaving the world and going back to the Father.”

John 17:5

“And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began.”

Revelation 22:13

“I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End.”

The Deity of Jesus is what makes His Name powerful! If the deity of Jesus can be undermined, then Christianity will have lost its heart and become a dead religion. Modern secularism is a challenge of the Deity and relevance of Jesus Christ in our society today.

The Deity of Jesus is the crux of Christianity. If this can be successfully challenged, then Christianity has lost its heart and will cease to function; it will become a dead religion.

2 Peter 2:1

But there were also false prophets among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who bought them — bringing swift destruction on themselves.

Jude 4

For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord.

The challenge of Jesus' deity is found in our society today in our liberal education system, colleges and churches- in society. Even though our nation was founded on Biblical principles and the Deity of Jesus Christ as Lord and God, that is not what is esteemed today. If Jesus is not Deity, He is not Lord, if He is not Lord than He cannot interfere with our moral activities. If He is not Lord, then the laws that have been founded upon His teachings have lost their force. The morals that surround marriage with its lofty ideals have no basis of fact. There is a permissiveness in society, no one who lives that way has respect for the Deity of Jesus, because we would follow His Word and teaching and morals. If Jesus is not a revelation from God with divine authority than He is just a good man, His teaching is but a philosophy that one can take or leave with no consequences.



If Jesus of Nazareth is not a revelation from God with Divine authority, then He is but a man. If Jesus is but a man than all we have built around Him must be destroyed, and we have built around this man our modern civilization. Men and woman have looked upon the life of Jesus and have received inspiration to live a pure life in order to please Him. Children have been incited to obedience and purity by the example and teachings of that Man. Business men have been moved from crooked ways, knowing that one day they would meet that Man, and have to stand at the Judgment seat of Christ to give an account. To say that He was just a good man, is an insult and would be equivalent to calling Him a liar. Jesus is or is not what He says He was. We have no record of His sayings nor of His doings outside the four Gospels, and if we repudiate them, then we have but a mythical picture of Jesus.

If we challenge one of them, we have a right to challenge all of them. Jesus dealt with the sin problem and was raised for our justification as our intercessor and mediator for the human race. The Word of God is true, Jesus is God and all the Bible says He is- Deity backs the Name of Jesus! Emmanuel, God with us or the Incarnate One (Isaiah 7:14). The wave of crime and lawlessness that is sweeping our nation is just a by-product of the modern, liberal, secular progressive movement. Challenging the integrity of the Word of God and Jesus Christ- it is the spirit of the antichrist.

2 Thessalonians 2:7-10

For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds it back will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus will overthrow with the breath of his mouth and destroy by the splendor of his coming. The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved.

Power in the Name of Jesus

In the natural, most of us have an understanding of our financial net worth. There is an intimate knowledge of what we possess, bank accounts, investments, 401K, IRA insurance policies etc. As for Christians there is such an appalling lack of knowledge concerning our glorious redemption and inheritance. How few of us really know, possess and enjoy what our full salvation covers and encompasses. Consider Psalms 138:2 in the Amplified, *“You have exalted above all else Your name and Your word and You have magnified Your word above all Your name!”* Through God's Word we come to understand the awesome power that is in the Name of Jesus.

Let's consider Matthew 18:19. The secret is in the context of why it will be done for those who agree in prayer. Simply put, it is done in the Name of Jesus according to verse 20. Jesus is taking about those two who are agreeing in His Name. Jesus is there to see to it that what they have agreed upon comes to pass- it all hinges on the Name of Jesus. All the Power and all the Authority that is in Jesus is in His Name!

Matthew 18:19-20

“Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three come together in my name, there am I with them.”

Here is one of my favorites passages of Scripture along these lines, it's found in Acts chapter 3. It has to do with the healing of an elderly crippled beggar man who sat at the Gate called Beautiful in Jerusalem.

Acts 3:1-8, 16

One day Peter and John were going up to the temple at the time of prayer — at three in the afternoon. Now a man crippled from birth was being carried to the temple gate called Beautiful, where he was put every day to beg from those going into the temple courts. When he saw Peter and John about to enter, he asked them for money. Peter looked straight at him, as did John. Then Peter said, “Look at us!” So the man gave them his attention, expecting to get something from them. Then Peter said, “Silver or gold I do not have, but **what I have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk.” Taking him by the right hand, he helped him up, and instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong. **By faith in the name of Jesus, this man whom you see and know was made strong. It is Jesus' name and the faith that comes through him** that has given this complete healing to him, as you can all see.**

“Such as I have I give unto you!” The Church does not realize they have anything except the forgiveness of sins- just sinners saved by grace. That is why the devil dominates these Christians. Anything else that is good from God is relegated to heaven, when they get to heaven then everything will be great- just hold out to the end because the devil is running everything- we have defeated ourselves. We say things like, “I can't, it's too hard, I'll never, poor ole me, please pray that I make it into heaven, not sure if I will...” Get the picture, this is not what the New Testament teaches! However, the New Testament does teach, “I am more than a conqueror, greater is He that is in me. God has given us all things that pertain to life and godliness right NOW!” We need to find out who we are in Christ today and live it out!

Example- Charles Spurgeon had visited an elderly woman who was bedfast, lived in a drafty old shack. She was malnourished and starving to death. As he was visiting her he noticed a document that was framed, hanging on the wall. She was a maid for around 50 years for one of the nobility in England; before she died, this noble woman gave it to her. Unfortunately this bedfast woman could not read, she just hung it on the wall as a memento. So Spurgeon took it to the authorities, who stated they had been looking for that, because the noble woman had left an inheritance for this maid, who was now 80 years old. She had inherited a home and money to be cared for the rest of her life, but there she was, living in shanty town starving to death. She had hanging on the wall of her room a document that authorized her to be well kept. The money was there just collecting interest, it belonged to her. But because of a lack of knowledge Hosea 4:6, she was suffering needlessly. Spiritually speaking so many Christians are living in a one room shanty and on their wall they have framed a copy of the New Covenant, oh they are proud of it. But they have not taken the time to read it and find out what it means, or they have a mental ascent of the Name of Jesus but have not acted upon it. The Name of Jesus is just as wonderful as Jesus, all His conquests, power and victories are in the Name of Jesus and the Name of Jesus belongs to us, to use in every area of life today! If we had known what was invested in the Name of Jesus we would have picked it up and put the devil on the run a long time ago!

Peter and John speaking to the beggar man, said that he had something, the same thing you and I have according to Mark 16, the Name of Jesus. The devil does not want us to know about the Name of Jesus. He does not care how religious we get as long as we don't know the power in the Name of Jesus and exercise it. Sadly, there is confusion in the Church, "Well the Lord can heal if He wants to, but it's not always His will." You even have Spirit filled believers who think, "Oh if we just had the power of the early church, just pray for the power, oh Lord send the power." But the power is there the whole time, they have already been filled with the Holy Spirit and are anointed. Why ask for what we already have! Let's wake up and find out what already belongs to us!

1 John 2:20, 27

But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and all of you know the truth. As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit — just as it has taught you, remain in him.

4. The Great Commission

Power of Attorney Defined

This concept, "The Power of Attorney" is foundational in understanding the authority of the Believer. It is defined as a document that gives another person legal authority to act on your behalf. If you create such a document, you are called the principal or granter (of the power), and the person to whom you give this authority is called the agent or attorney-in-fact. A power of attorney may be oral and whether witnessed or not, will hold up in court, same as if it were in writing.



Jesus gave us the power of attorney, the legal right to use His Name. The value of the Name of Jesus is based on how much power is backing the Name that it represents. So how much power and authority does Jesus have? To the victor belongs the spoils, Jesus has it all, and all the power and authority Jesus has is invested in His Name. Jesus gave us His Name to use in prayer, dealing with demons, ministering healing, water baptism, impartation of laying on of hands. It's all in the Name, the measure of power and ability released in the Name is the measure of the value of that Name. All that is invested in the Name belongs to us, Jesus gave us the unqualified use of His Name! Concerning Matthew 28:18- When you examine the language of the Great Commission, from a legal standpoint, Jesus gave His Church the "Power of Attorney" or the legal right to use His Name. Again, the value of the Power of Attorney depends upon how much there is back of it, Matthew 28:18 gives us insight to how much authority His Name represents.

Matthew 28:18-20 AMP

Jesus approached and, breaking the silence, said to them, **All authority (all power of rule) in heaven and on earth has been given to Me. Go then and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, Teaching them to observe everything that I have commanded you, and behold, I am with you all the days (perpetually, uniformly, and on every occasion), to the [very] close and consummation of the age. Amen (so let it be).**

The measure of His ability is the measure of the value of that Name, and all that is invested in that Name belongs to us, for Jesus gave us the unqualified use of His Name.

Jesus gave to His Church, the right to use His Name; that right meant that we are to represent Him in the earth today. We act as Jesus would in any given situation, when we encounter people that are hurting and need healing or deliverance. Well, doing what He did, would be to set them free and perform even greater works. That is what it means to be an Ambassadors of Christ, we are acting on His behalf as His representation, His feet, hands, voice, love, faith and power on the earth. Jesus is currently at the right hand of the Father while we are here on the earth. If ministry is to be done on behalf of a lost and hurting world, it will have to be done through us- not only collectively, but also individually. Using His authority delegated to us; in order to carry out His will on the earth like He did 2,000 years ago.

2 Corinthians 5:20

We are therefore Christ's ambassadors, as though God were making his appeal through us. We implore you on Christ's behalf: Be reconciled to God.

Galatians 2:20

I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

What we are saying is this, "Father, Jesus is up there at your Right Hand and He gave us the Power of Attorney to carry out Your will on the earth. So here is this great need, so we speak in Jesus' Name that this need be met." So we take Jesus' place and use Jesus' Name just as though Jesus Himself were here. The only difference is that instead of Jesus doing it, we are doing it for Him. In another sense, He does it through us since we are His Body. Bottom line, we are acting according to His Word! He has given us the same authority He had when He was here, and the Believer's position in Christ gives them the same standing with the Father that Christ had when He was here on the earth.

Concerning the early church and the use of the Name of Jesus, they did not argue about it, they did not worry about it, they did not stop and analyze what it meant- all they did was act on the Words of Jesus. They did not understand all that Paul did when afterwards by the Holy Spirit, greater light was given through the Epistles, like the Book of Romans, Galatians and Ephesians. However, they did know that Jesus had given them a right to use that Name and they entered into that right with the simplicity of a child. Using the Name as directed in the Bible glorifies the Father, magnifies Jesus and answers the need of humanity. Here is supernatural power that is available to every believer.

It is not a question of education or ordination but merely a question of me apprehending my own true position in Christ, and there using the power that has been legally given to me and to every believer- power to the people, the people of God! Oh, the wonder and Grace of God!

Remember, according to Matthew 28:18, Jesus had received all power and authority in heaven and in earth. So what does Jesus immediately do with it, He delegates it to the Church to go forth in His Name through the power of attorney and fulfill the Great Commission on His behalf. Jesus has authorized us, sending us out to make disciples of all nations and He is with us always. He is with us through the person of the Holy Spirit living inside of us. Jesus is with us when we stand upon and speak His Name, Jesus is on the scene to back up His Name every time!

Unit 5 Review:

What is it about miracles and the supernatural that has such an appeal to mankind?

Sadly, many churches have lost the supernatural element, why?

Why are “Names” of people in the Bible so significant?

When did Jesus obtain that “Name” which is above all other names?

What does it mean that Satan has been paralyzed by Jesus?

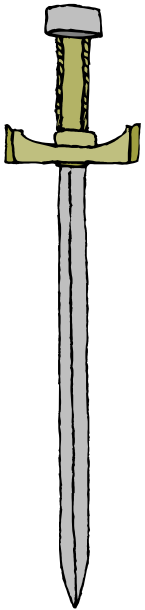
Why was the Name of Jesus given to us?

What is Authority? It is Delegated Power!

Jesus has given us the authority to trample over ALL the power of the enemy- that is good news!

Luke 10:17-20

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, “Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.” He replied, “I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you. However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”



Authority is delegated power, but the value of that power is based on the ability of the institution that backs one up.

Ephesians 6:10 AMP

In conclusion, be strong in the Lord [be empowered through your union with Him]; draw your strength from Him [that strength which His boundless might provides].

Notice that Ephesians 6:10 does not say to be strong in ourselves, but to be strong in the Lord. This is done by trusting and resting in the Power that is behind the Name of Jesus. Does not matter what we feel, our strength comes from the Lord and the power of His might. We need to learn to start relaxing and laughing, because bless God we are strong in the Lord, we are in Christ. The value of authority depends on the force behind the user. Jesus gave unto us authority according Luke 10:19. God Himself is the power behind the authority that was given unto us- greater is He that is in us than the defeated enemy that is in the world according to 1 John 4:4!

This authority was not just for the 12 disciples, or the 72 He sent out. These folks at that time were not born again, they had a promissory note on it, but the reality was not there's until after the resurrection of Jesus. We have a greater reality of this; a God given authority for the blood washed, Spirit filled believer. If it is any less than what they had, then what Jesus did in His death burial and resurrection was a flat failure- would have been better that He left it the way it was so we would have some power over the devil. No, we have the fulfillment of what Jesus did in His redemption, not less; since we live in the reality of the New Covenant that is in full force today!

The believer that is thoroughly convinced of the divine power that is behind him and of his own authority that has been delegated to him and exercises it, can face the enemy without fear or hesitancy. The other religions of the world cannot impart life to anyone nor do they give them any authority over the devil. Christianity is the only reality where God lives in us- Christ in you the hope of Glory. Trust in the God that is in you, being the temple of the Holy Spirit- 2 Corinthians 6:14-16.

We are never without help, never without God, He never leaves us or forsakes us. In the Old Testament they would look unto the hills for help or to Jerusalem, but thank God in the New Covenant, God is not far off somewhere. No, in Christ He dwells in us, to give us illumination to our mind from our spirit and tells us what to do in order to overcome every crisis of life. He has the answers and He indwells us, so why should we ever need to look somewhere else?

I have a great analogy that explains authority and how it's exercised by using a policeman. Suppose you come to an intersection in your car and observe a traffic cop directing traffic. During the course of his duties, he wants cars to stop at his command right? Question, does he have the physical power in himself to hold back cars at a traffic light? Obviously, he does not have the power to stop all the traffic, but he has the authority or right to do so. So how does he go about stopping all those powerful cars from running him over? All he has to do is boldly stand in the middle of that intersection and raise his hand and those cars had better stop or else. Those motorists better recognize that authority, but how do the good folks know when someone is authorized. Obviously the uniform and particularly



the badge the officer wears sends this message. The police officer has been authorized to represent the city and to exercise the laws of the city, state and nation! If a person should challenge the officer, it really is a challenge to the power of the entire government system that has authorized him and backs him up. The same Greek word for "Seal" in 2 Corinthians 1:22 and Ephesians 1:13 means, "to be stamped as with a signet ring or to mark" like a brand or tattoo. The Holy Spirit, the Greater One within us is the power that backs us up when we speak the Name of Jesus. We were branded by God as His property which means no trespassing for Satan to afflict us with sickness and oppression. However, like the policeman, we must exercise this authority in order for the power to kick in and get the job done!

2 Corinthians 1:21-22

Now it is God who makes both us and you stand firm in Christ. He anointed us, set his seal of ownership on us, and put his Spirit in our hearts as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

Ephesians 1:13-14

And you also were included in Christ when you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation. Having believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit, who is a deposit guaranteeing our inheritance until the redemption of those who are God's possession — to the praise of his glory.

We try to put out all this effort to make the devil stop, when all we have to do is stand our ground and command the devil to cease and desist in his maneuvers and operations in the Name of Jesus. The devil will come to a screeching halt! For this to work, we must know that authority has been given to us; secondly, we must understand the power that backs up this authority. Third we must be submitted to God in obedience to His Word and finally we must exercise it! The devil is already intimately acquainted with this knowledge first hand when Jesus paralyzed him 2,000 years ago- praise God Satan's defeat is always fresh in his mind. However, if he can keep us from knowing it or acting upon it, he has us defeated and will dominate us. Proverbs 28:1, "*The wicked man flees though no one pursues, but the righteous are as bold as a lion.*" James 4:7, "*So be subject to God. Resist the devil [stand firm against him], and he will flee from you.*"

1 Peter 5:8-9 AMP

Be well balanced (temperate, sober of mind), be vigilant and cautious at all times; for that enemy of yours, the devil, roams around like a lion roaring [in fierce hunger], seeking someone to seize upon and devour. Withstand him; be firm in faith [against his onset — rooted, established, strong, immovable, and determined].

Authority conferred upon the Church

Even though Jesus is the head over every principality and power, this authority can only be exercised through His Body, the Church. This is where Christians get confused concerning the Sovereignty of God. Traditional thought goes, “God is Sovereign and can do what He wants and when He wants to, and everything is under His control.” Well if everything is under His control, then why is the world so messed up? At present Satan is the god of this world and will continue to be until Adam’s lease runs out. Until such time, God will only intervene in the affairs of men when He is asked to by the Church.



Remember Christians have been given the keys to bind and loose things on this earth according to Matthew 18:18. The stark reality is that evil persists in the earth because we permit them or allow them to. We don’t know our authority or we are not acting on our authority. We are praying that God would do something about it. He is not going to do anything about it because He has already delegated this authority over to us. We are to put the devil under our feet and trample over him. The tragic irony is that well-meaning Christians sit idly by, allowing the devil to ravish the land because in their religious thinking, “God is Sovereign and will work out His will out of the ashes of tragedy, havoc and human misery.”

I’ll never forget what a well-known prophet of God had said years ago, “The Lord Jesus holds Christians in America accountable for allowing the Vietnam War to happen because they would not pray.”

1 Timothy 2:1-4

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone—for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. This is good, and pleases God our Savior, who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.

Putting the responsibility off on God, spiritualizing and rationalizing trials, tests and temptations as God sovereignly making us more like Jesus can be such a mistake. In effect, we are laying down and letting the devil stomp all over us and dig his heels into our backs. Clearly the devil perpetuates these falsehoods in order to disarm and pacify Christians from fighting back when he attacks them- “Wouldn’t want to resist God’s will from having its perfect work in our lives, right?” No, the Bible tells us to resist the devil, who is the author of trials, tests and temptations that are designed to destroy us, not to help us. Remember, we can have 10 miles of trials and not grow an inch if we don’t in the midst of the attack overcome it by acting on the Word of God; then and only then do we grow in character and strengthen our faith walk. However, there are more preferable ways to grow in character, like practicing the Word of God when no one is looking or when it’s not popular and especially when we don’t feel like it. Let’s not glamorize the devil’s work as through it was the best thing that ever happened to us. What about all those other folks that were swallowed up and turned their backs on God because of trials, tests and temptations- we never hear about those casualties of war do we. In order to make good use of our authority in Jesus, we need to have as much Bible sense to distinguish a good God has only good things in store for us and that a bad devil only peddles bad things against us.

John 10:10 AMP

The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).

James 1:16-17

Don’t be deceived, my dear brothers. Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

If the Lord could do whatever He wants to in the earth than everyone would get saved today and tomorrow we would just go into the Millennium. If God was sovereign to such a point that He controls everything, than there would be no use for us to pray since God is in control, and what happens in the earth is always His will. Don't misunderstand me, I believe that God is sovereign to the extent the Bible teaches that He is sovereign, but folks push this into areas where it does not belong and becomes a great hindrance and stumbling block. Jesus is coming back again, that is God's sovereign will and I believe that. But I don't believe that God sovereignly sends bad things in my life ever, nor is it His will that people perish, suffer and die in wars famines and accidents. We need to take responsibility as believers and acknowledge that we often drop the ball in the area of prayer and using the Name of Jesus over the devil, and we permit bad things to happen by virtual of our inaction and/or ignorance on these matters.

Matthew 7:9-11

Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!

When Jesus was in His hometown, the Bible says that He "Could Not" do any mighty miracles which implies that He wanted to but was not able to. Well, I thought God was Sovereign and could do anything He wants to. Well He can't override folks wills and make them accept something they do not want or believe in. Consider the children of Israel, God's will was clearly for them to enter into the Promise Land, but instead they wandered for 40 years in the desert until that generation had died- why, because God changed His mind, No! It was because of unbelief. God can lead people to His Rivers of living water, but can't make them drink. This does not diminish God's power or sovereignty. God is sovereign in that He makes the rules, but that never excuses Him to break them and so contradict Himself.

Mark 6:5-6

He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. And he was amazed at their lack of faith.

Romans 3:3-4

What if some did not have faith? Will their lack of faith nullify God's faithfulness? Not at all! Let God be true, and every man a liar.

Hebrews 3:16-19

Who were they who heard and rebelled? Were they not all those Moses led out of Egypt? And with whom was he angry for forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose bodies fell in the desert? And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.

Remember our Policeman illustration, wouldn't it be strange for that traffic cop, instead of using the authority that was delegated to him to direct traffic, if he were to say, "I think I'm going to call the mayor and ask him to do something about this traffic jam." Even if the mayor is the head of the local government, he had delegated authority to the police force to handle it. So it is with God, He is not going to do anything about the devil that is up to us, God has given us the authority to deal with the devil. We don't need to pray and ask God what we are to do when the devil is operating, just shut him down in Jesus' Name. Whether it's sickness, poverty, oppression of any kind or anything contrary to Scripture, we have to deal with it. Christians will get disturbed when they try to use this authority and circumstances do not change immediately; they'll get in the natural and give the devil authority over them. We must stand in faith and stand by what we believe in God's Word, not by what we see or feel. The mountain of circumstances has to move, the fig tree has no choice, just believe it in your spirit.

Mark 11:22-25

“Have faith in God,” Jesus answered. “I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours. And when you stand praying, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him, so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your sins.”

Luke 17:6

He replied, “If you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mulberry tree, ‘Be uprooted and planted in the sea,’ and it will obey you.”

Notice that the mountain and fig tree obey us, not God. Just as a regular citizen would obey the police officer standing in front of them as opposed to the mayor in his/her office. Yes, God is the supreme authority but we are His agents in this earth and the devil and circumstances of life have to obey us as though they would obey the One who has sent us- just as if He were here in the flesh again on earth.

Jesus is with us in the Power and Authority of His Name!

Since Jesus is the same, so is His Name that worked for the early church and works for the Church today. There was not one kind of Church 2,000 years ago and a different one today. It's the same Body of Christ. The same Name that brought salvation, answered prayer, provided access to the Father, to cast out devils that belonged to the early church belongs to us today. They did not have some special authority that was unique to them only.

Acts 19:13-17

Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, “In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out.” Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. [One day] the evil spirit answered them, “Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?” Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding. When this became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor.

In Acts 19:13-17 there is a unique story about seven sons of Sceva who were posers and trying to use the Name of Jesus like a good luck charm. They had no right to use that Name because they were not believers. That Name belongs to us, the Church and we can use that Name. The authority that is in the Name of Jesus releases all the power of God on our behalf. Notice what the evil spirit did to these guys, and also notice that the “Name of the Lord Jesus” was held in high honor for the power that it had.

When we realize that this authority has been given to the individual members of the body of Christ and not to the ministry gifts alone, it puts the responsibility squarely upon every believer. We are not only a member of the body, but we have become a responsible member of that Body of Christ- so no more excuses! We have a legal right to use the Name of Jesus. It simply comes down to obedience to the Great Commission, faithfully discharging our ministry as an ambassador of Christ and release the unlimited power of God in the earth through our lives!

Matthew 28:18-20

Then Jesus came to them and said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

In review, remember this passage of Scripture in Matthew 28:18, speaks of delegated authority given by Jesus to His Church in the earth. The intent of this divine transfer is for the Church to carry on His ministry in this world while He is in Heaven, seated at the Right Hand of the Father. Jesus is the Head and we are the Body of Christ. Jesus can't do anything in the earth except through His Body. It's like our head wanting to pick up a drink of water, but it can't do so except through the body. The head gives the commands and orders and the body carries those instructions out. It is a mutual need for each other. Our problem is that we try to get the Head to do everything, but how is it going to get carried out except through His body.

Our minds do not want to accept that because we have been religiously brainwashed instead of New Testament taught. We have been taught how miserably we are, just sinners saved by grace, so unworthy, can't do anything, “yes Jesus has all the authority but we don't.” Anything that is told about us that is bad we can accept it, but when we are told anything good, we find it hard to accept. Yes Christ has the authority all right, but if He has it so do we, if He doesn't then we don't either. Because we are the Body and He is the Head- 1 Corinthians 12:12; 2 Corinthians 6:14-15. He who unites himself with the Lord is one with Him in spirit according to 1 Corinthians 6:16. Being one in Christ as His Body means, whatever Jesus has we have, His victories are my victories. We are co-laborers with Him, we are seated with Him and share in His throne now. In John 14:14, we are called by the Master to do the works of Jesus, why, because we are an extension of Him in the earth today to carry on His ministry in His Name.

Mark 16:15-20

He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well.”

After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at the right hand of God. Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Ephesians 2:1-5- By the faith we see the operation of God the Father, we were raised with Christ when Jesus was resurrected from the dead. So that in the ages to come we would experience the wonderful power of God in our lives. My friends, this belongs to us TODAY, the day of Salvation and deliverance and dominion over the devil! We are seated far above the enemy through Jesus Christ. The Church has failed to see that we have been exalted with Christ. Jesus is the Head and is totally dependent upon His Body, us to carry out His authority over the powers of the air. It has to be done through the Body of Christ- Matthew 18:18 speaks of binding and loosing; prohibiting the devil from operating.

Matthew 18:18-20

“I tell you the truth, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three come together in my name, there am I with them.”

The truth of the matter is that things happen on the earth because we, the Church allow them to. We have relegated this responsibility over to God due to a misunderstanding of “God’s Sovereignty” that whatever shall be shall be, whether it’s good or bad, it’s all part of God’s master plan. This line of thinking is very convenient for Satan to run rampant and unchecked in the earth since the Church looks to God to deal with the devil and God is looking right back at the Church expecting Her to put the devil in his place. James 4:7- *“Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.”*

1 Peter 5:8-9

Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. Resist him, standing firm in the faith.

What these folks fail to factor in is our free will and delegated authority to pray and change current events. It’s our responsibility to pray that God’s will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Ever since creation, when God gave Adam and Eve the charge to exercise dominion in the earth (Genesis 1:26-28), we are still exercising stewardship, authority and influence in this earth. Especially now since the devil has been defeated by Jesus in His death, burial and resurrection. If we leave the state of the world up to God and resign ourselves into the seat of apathy, then yes the world will go to pot at an ever faster rate. What the Church does or does not do is what regulates current events, not God’s sovereignty. When evil pops its head up, and we stand by and do nothing, neither will God. However, when we pray and speak the Name of Jesus and bind the enemy, the angels start working; God starts moving, but not until we open our mouths! If exercising our God given authority through Jesus’ Name in prayer does not make a difference, then how do we reconcile just a sample of the many scriptures that speak on the subject:

Ezekiel 22:29-30 NKJV

The people of the land have used oppressions, committed robbery, and mistreated the poor and needy; and they wrongfully oppress the stranger. So I sought for a man among them who would make a wall, and stand in the gap before Me on behalf of the land, that I should not destroy it; but I found no one.

Matthew 5:13-16

“You are the salt of the earth. But if the salt loses its saltiness, how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled by men. You are the light of the world. A city on a hill cannot be hidden. Neither do people light a lamp and put it under a bowl. Instead they put it on its stand, and it gives light to everyone in the house. In the same way, let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your Father in heaven.”

1 Timothy 2:1-5

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone— for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. This is good, and pleases God our Savior, who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.

God called us to be world changes with His Gospel message demonstrated in Signs and Wonders. So that ungodly men will say of us, Acts 17:6 *“These men who have caused trouble all over the world have now come here.”* In Ephesians 1:17-23 we see God having made an indescribable investment for the benefit of the Church. He has made this deposit on which the Church has a right to draw from for Her every need. Jesus is the head of the Church and we are His Body, we are baptized into the Head. To the Head belongs the Name and the Head gives us the Body the right to live, walk and to use the power of that Name. He has given that Name to us- the same Name for the early church and the Church today!

5. The Unqualified Use of the Name of Jesus

Religion has tried to put limits and conditions upon the use of the Name of Jesus. Certainly it must be used in context with the Bible, so let's look at what Scriptures have to say on the subject- notice the use of "Whatever," "Anything" and "Everything" in the following verses:

Matthew 18:18

"I tell you the truth, **whatever** you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and **whatever** you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven."

Matthew 21:22- "If you believe, you will receive **whatever** you ask for in prayer."

Mark 11:24-25

"Therefore I tell you, **whatever** you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours."

John 14:12-14

"I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do **whatever** you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for **anything** in my name, and I will do it."

John 15:16

"You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit — fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you **whatever** you ask in my name."

John 16:23-24

"In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you **whatever** you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete."

Mark 9:23- "If you can?" said Jesus. "**Everything** is possible for him who believes."

John 15:7-8

"If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask **whatever** you wish, and it will be given you. This is to my Father's glory, that you bear much fruit, showing yourselves to be my disciples."

In John 15:7-8, Jesus had disclosed a principle key to prayer and releasing authority in the Name of Jesus. Being full of God's Word is a must, which enables us to direct our attention to matters that are important to God and His kingdom. Without God's Word as a guide, using our authority would be like shooting in the dark or being blind folded. The Bible sets our priorities, our agenda and our goals; which is as to first importance, fulfill the Great Commission and trample upon the works of darkness.

2 Corinthians 10:4-5

The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.



In John 15:17 and 16:23-24 we see a form of prayer known as the prayer of petition. It is exercised whenever we use the Name of Jesus to ask the Father God for something. Asking the Father for something in Jesus' Name, is the same as Jesus Himself making the request of the Father on our behalf. Indeed, Jesus is our mediator or means by which we have access to the Father according to 1 Timothy 2:5- "*For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.*" Jesus not only gives us the use of His Name, but He also declares that the prayer, prayed in His Name will receive His special attention. Jesus is basically saying, "Whatever you ask the Father in My Name I will endorse it and He will give it you." When we demand of the devil to leave (John 14:12-14), Jesus is there to back His Name up and make it good.

This puts prayer on a purely legal basis for He has given us the legal right to use His Name. As we take our privileges and rights in the New Covenant and pray in Jesus' Name, it goes right to the throne. So no more wishing and hoping our prayers will be answered.

John 16:26-28

In that day you will ask in my name. I am not saying that I will ask the Father on your behalf. No, the Father himself loves you because you have loved me and have believed that I came from God.

Hebrews 4:16

Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need.

When we pray in Jesus' Name, it gets the same attention from the Father as though Jesus Himself were doing the praying. This places prayer not only on legal grounds, but makes it a business proposition. When we pray, we take Jesus' place here on earth to carry out His will, and He takes our place before the Father. The Name of Jesus is not only used in our prayer life, but must also be used in our combat against the unseen forces that surround us.

Mark 16:15-18

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who **believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."**

The statement Jesus made, "*And these signs will accompany those who believe...*" in the Greek literally means "the believing ones" will in My Name do these things- in which case every child of God is a believing one in Christ. The right to use His Name is a conferred blessing to the Church, it is a right that belongs to every child of God.

In Matthew 28:18 Jesus is revealing His part in the Great Commission:

- All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me
- I am sending you out to make disciples of all nations
- I am with you always, to the very end of the age

The Name of Jesus in Prayer

In John 16:23-24, up to that time the disciples had not asked for anything in His Name. We ask the Father in the Name of Jesus and not for Jesus' sake; concerning the latter, there is no directive in the New Testament concerning prayer for Jesus' sake. Traditional praying along these lines have resulted in well intentioned praying, but to no avail. Our prayers spoken in Jesus' Name receives special attention; this is the prayer of petition that He endorses. We have been religiously brainwashed instead of New Testament taught, we have watered down the promises of God and tacked on something Jesus did not say. Concerning answers to prayer folks will say "He will answer your prayer alright if it's His will, but it might not be His will." Yet we do not find that kind of talk in the New Testament. Sadly they go on their way without answers to their prayers, because their prayers were not prayers of faith on the Word.

Faith begins where the will of God is known and God's Word is God's will. If that was not bad enough, these same folks having nullified their prayer life with doubt and unbelief will go on and reason why their prayers were not answered. "Well it must not have been His will since He did not answer it, because if it was His will He would have done it. You know God's ways are higher than our ways, He is Sovereign, His paths are too wondrous for us to know. Sometimes it's 'Yes' and sometimes it's 'No', the Lord gives and Lord takes away, blessed be the Name of the Lord." I'm sorry, but this religious jargon is really dangerous. Taking Old Testament Scriptures out of context and trying to impose them on New Covenant believers. Under the Old Covenant, they were servants without the New Birth, sonship or Holy Spirit within them. We have a better Covenant with better promises, Jesus calls us His friends, that we may know the Father's will, so now He reveals His thoughts and ways to us!

1 John 5:14-15

This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. And if we know that he hears us — **whatever we ask — we know that we have what we asked of him.**

John 15:12-17

My command is this: Love each other as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends. You are my friends if you do what I command. **I no longer call you servants, because a servant does not know his master's business. Instead, I have called you friends, for everything that I learned from my Father I have made known to you. You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit — fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. This is my command: Love each other.**

Hebrews 3:5-6

Moses was faithful as a servant in all God's house, testifying to what would be said in the future. But Christ is faithful as a son over God's house. And we are his house, if we hold on to our courage and the hope of which we boast.

Folks will say concerning prayer, "God always answers, but sometimes it is 'Yes' and sometimes it is 'No'." Where is that in the Bible, if we ask in line with the Word we have a confidence that it will always be "Yes." You see religious folks have added to the Bible to make it say something that is not there. This is so much more than just semantics, I have personally known wonderful, well-meaning Christians who have died of cancer thinking it was God's will for them to suffer under Satan's cruelty. Doctrines of demons like these have crept in the Church and has reeked much havoc, so please understand my earnest desire to correct the record. I'm weary of seeing my brothers and sisters in Christ victimized and ripped off in life by the lies of the enemy.

Let's apply that human reasoning to Matthew 18:19-20 "Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven; *however sometimes it will be yes and sometimes it will be no and other times it will be later.*" You see we have added to the Bible and tried to come up with an explanation as to why our prayers were not answered. The main reason these prayers do not work is because the simple instructions of God's Word were not followed. The Word works when we work it as directed! Why not just admit we missed it and get in the Word.

Romans 3:3-4

What if some did not have faith? Will their lack of faith nullify God's faithfulness? Not at all! Let God be true, and every man a liar. As it is written: "So that you may be proved right when you speak and prevail when you judge."

I would rather hear the truth as to why it didn't work than to be patronized by religious folks making excuses and spiritualizing the situation. This practice does a huge amount of harm, because the next time we pray about something, our minds, having been filled with religious doubt and unbelief become stumbling blocks in our prayer life. Consider what James said if a man has doubts when he asks, he should not think he will receive anything from the Lord.

James 1:5-8

If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.

Remember, God honors His Word, and He shows no favoritism. Being a "Good" Christian does not compensate for doubt and ignorance concerning prayer. Folks think that God will make an exception for sloppy believing in prayer, "Well God knows what I mean." If we are praying for nothing in particular, guess what, that is exactly what we are going to get- nothing in particular.

Hebrews 11:6

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

On a side note, it is one thing to pray for ourselves and immediate family, but no one through prayer and faith can push something off on someone else, circumventing their free will- otherwise we would get everyone saved. So when it comes to praying for others, their will, unbelief or doubt can nullify the effects of our prayers for them. Thank God, someone else's doubt will not affect our prayers for ourselves, unless we allow them to.

Another point worth mentioning, faith does not mean we can push our body and over work it. Nor can we eat irresponsibly or consume toxic substances like nicotine, drugs and alcohol. Not only are our bodies the Temple of the Holy Spirit, but they are also mortal, they require proper sleep, diet and exercise. Faith is never meant to be an excuse for violating natural laws concerning our bodies. Someone could say, well can't you believe God to heal you. Not when you put the Lord to the test, it's like hitting your thumb with a hammer on purpose and say, "Well I believe God will heal my thumb"- that is wrong.

Faith does not deny the existence of circumstances, but denies it the right to lord itself over our lives. In Romans 4:19 concerning Abraham and the promise of God in having a child, "*Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead.*" His faith was in God's ability to honor His Word. When believing God for healing, keep taking the medicine until your healing manifests.



Matthew 4:5-7

Then the devil took him to the holy city and had him stand on the highest point of the temple. “If you are the Son of God,” he said, “throw yourself down. For it is written:

‘He will command his angels concerning you, and they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.’”

Jesus answered him, “It is also written: ‘Do not put the Lord your God to the test.’”

John 16:23-24, 26

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete. In that day you will ask in my name.

The above passages of Scripture are referring to the prayer of petition, where we ask the Father in the Name of Jesus. However, there is the big difference between the prayer of petition of John 16:23-24, 26 and the release of spiritual authority in John 14:14.

John 14:12-14

I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

In the latter passage, you are not praying, but you are using the authority of the Name to heal the sick, to cast out demons and to set men and woman free. What we see in the Book of Acts is a distinct pattern of laying hands on the sick and commanding the devil to leave. Another staggering fact was that the Name was used largely in healing men and women who were not Christians. It evidently was God’s method of advertising the Gospel message. In most cases, having had a little taste of the goodness of God through the healing of their bodies, sealed the deal for them to want all of Salvation for their lives!

Acts 8:5-8

Philip went down to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Christ there. When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, they all paid close attention to what he said. With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city.

Romans 2:4

Or do you show contempt for the riches of his kindness, tolerance and patience, not realizing that God’s kindness leads you toward repentance?

2 Corinthians 10:17- “But, ‘Let him who boasts boast in the Lord.’”

There is a wonderful principle concerning the ministry of all believers called “Stewardship.” We are carriers of God’s grace, taking cool water to a dry and thirsty land yearning for the genuine power of God and moving of the Spirit.

Matthew 10:8

Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. **Freely you have received, freely give.**

1 Corinthians 4:6-7

Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself and Apollos for your benefit, so that you may learn from us the meaning of the saying, “Do not go beyond what is written.” Then you will not take pride in one man over against another. For who makes you different from anyone else? **What do you have that you did not receive? And if you did receive it, why do you boast as though you did not?**

John 15:5

“I am the vine; you are the branches. If a man remains in me and I in him, he will bear much fruit; **apart from me you can do nothing.”**

2 Corinthians 4:6-7

For God, who said, “Let light shine out of darkness,” made his light shine in our hearts to give us the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ. **But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all-surpassing power is from God and not from us.**

Everything we have in God, we have received for our benefit, but more than that, it is also for the benefit of others who would be recipients of our ministry for the glory of God.

Acts 20:32-35

“Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified. I have not coveted anyone’s silver or gold or clothing. You yourselves know that these hands of mine have supplied my own needs and the needs of my companions. In everything I did, I showed you that by this kind of hard work we must help the weak, remembering the words the Lord Jesus himself said: **‘It is more blessed to give than to receive.’”**

John 14:13- The word “Ask” would be better translated “Demand.” We are not demanding of Jesus, rather we are demanding of the devil in the Name of Jesus. Whatever we demand in the Name of Jesus, the Lord backs us up in exercising the will of God in the earth.

For example, in Acts chapter 3 in dealing with the crippled man, Peter took him by the hand and just demanded in the Name of Jesus for the man to get up and walk. Notice that Peter did not ask God to do anything, this was not a prayer of petition in operation. In speaking the Name of Jesus for healing, Jesus was there to release His power to get the man up and walking through His Name.

Acts 3:16

By faith in the name of Jesus, this man whom you see and know was made strong. It is Jesus’ name and the faith that comes through him that has given this complete healing to him, as you can all see.

In regards to casting out demons, nowhere does the Bible tell us to pray to God about it; rather we are to just cast them out in Jesus' Name when encountered! No need to ask for permission.

Luke 10:17

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, "Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name."

The Use of the Name of Jesus! 4 kinds of asking!

It may be a surprise to you that John 14:13-14 is not talking about prayer. If John 16:23 and John 14:13 were saying the same thing concerning prayer, then we would have a contradiction. John 16 says to no longer ask Jesus for anything, but rather ask the Father in the Name of Jesus. On the other hand, John 14:13 tells us that we can ask Jesus for anything in His Name. So which is it? Well the Bible does not contradict itself!

John 16:23-24

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete.

John 14:13-14

And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

As I have already pointed out that John 16:23-24 addresses the prayer of petition, whatever we ask the Father in Jesus' Name, He will give it to us. We have the use of the Name of Jesus in our prayer life and that Name guarantees an answer.

The word "Ask" in John 14:13-14 in the Greek means, "Whatever you shall demand as your rights and privileges, that shall I do." We can't demand what we don't know, that is where we failed- lack of knowledge. We do not know what we have. What we have heard was a psychology of unbelief from occupational ministers; which is a big difference from faith in God, by believing with our heart, not head knowledge. It's our destiny as believers to use the Name of Jesus to heal, deliver, save and fill people with the Holy Spirit. In the book of the Acts, healing was just demanded as opposed to asked for in prayer. We have dominion over the works of the enemy, sickness etc.

John 16 is talking about the prayer of petition, but John 14:13 is talking about the prayer of authority. Do you see the difference between the two. This is where so many Christians have missed it, instead of demanding of the devil to stop oppressing people with sickness or whatever, we are asking the Father or Jesus to deal with the devil- Jesus already did. As a matter of fact, Jesus has done all He is going to do with the devil, it's now up to us to use the Name of Jesus and enforce Satan's defeat. We are going about it all wrong. In dealing with the devil, the prayer for God to do something won't get answered. God has authorized us to deal with these problems. God won't do a thing except back us up when we demand of the devil to leave in Jesus' Name.

Here is a rule of thumb to keep in mind, ask God for things the Bible tells us to ask for, like wisdom in James 1:5, literally tells us to ask for it. When dealing with areas of our Christian life that are forever settled, like redemption, we don't need to ask for things that are already ours. Take healing for instance, it already belongs to us so we don't ask for it. We do need to claim it as ours in Jesus' Name, appropriating it by faith through the confession of God's Word. Speaking God's Word as fact, that we already have it is how we apply it in our lives- no prayer is necessary.

The Name of Jesus to the believer is like the keys to our own car, we already have the keys, so why ask somebody else for them- just use them, because they already belong to us! The Name of Jesus is ours to use for God's glory!

NT:4441

punthanomai (poon-than'-om-ahee); middle voice prolonged from a primary putho (which occurs only as an alternate in certain tenses); to question, i.e. ascertain by inquiry (as a matter of information merely; and thus differing from NT:2065, which properly means a request as a favor; and from NT:154, which is strictly a demand for something due; as well as from NT:2212, which implies a search for something hidden; and from NT:1189, which involves the idea of urgent need); by implication, to learn (by casual intelligence):

KJV - ask, demand, enquire, understand.

Ask:

2065- Which properly means a request as a favor

1905- To ask for

2065- Mt. 21:24; Lk. 9:45; 19:31; 20:3; 22:68; Jn. 1:19; 9:21, 23; 16:19, 23, 30

1905- Mt. 22:46; Mk. 9:32; 11:29; 12:34; Lk. 6:9; 20:40; Jn. 18:21; 1 Cor. 14:35

Demand:

154- Strictly a demand for something due

523- To demand back, ask again or require

154- Mt. 6:8; 7:7, 9-11; 14:7; 18:19; 20:22; 21:22; 27:20; Mk. 6:22-24; 10:38
Lk. 11:9, 11-13; 12:48; Jn. 11:22; 14:13-14; 15:7, 16; 16:23-24, 26

Acts 3:2; Eph. 3:20; Jas. 1:5-6; 4:2-3; 1 Jn. 3:22; 5:14-16

523- Lk. 6:30

Enquire:

2212- Implies a search for something hidden, to seek after

1833- to test thoroughly by questions, interrogate, to examine, search, enquire

1833- Jn. 21:21

Understand:

4441- To question, ascertain by inquiry; as a matter of information merely

1189- The idea of urgent need; petition, beseech, pray to, make request, to learn

4441- Jn. 13:24; Acts 10:29

Unit 6 Review:

Explain the concept of the “Power of Attorney” as it pertains to the Name of Jesus.

What is authority?

How does traditional sovereignty teaching interfere with exercising authority in Jesus’ Name?

Why is it necessary to distinguish the difference between “Good God vs. Bad devil”?

What is really behind bad things happening in the earth?

Is the Bible reference in John 14:13-14 speaking of the prayer of “Petition” as in John 16:23-24?

6. The Place of Faith in the Use of the Name

The Key is faith in His Name that releases the Power of God. **We know the Name, but our faith in the Name has been weak!** Most Christians believe the Name of Jesus belongs to them, but having faith in the Name is not the same. That is why we are not performing the same miracles they had in the early church, because our faith in the Name is not the same. So if faith comes by hearing the Word of God, how will our faith in the Name of Jesus increase. By studying and hearing what the Word of God has to say about the Name of Jesus.

Get a Revelation of the Name

So what did Peter and John have when they used the Name compared to us today? The same power, because Jesus has not changed! If we try to use the Name without studying out what it means and get the revelation of it in our spirit through Bible meditation, it won't work for us- it's not a magic charm or rabbit's foot. We have to know what backs that Name. It belongs to us, so we need to know it and use it and live in victory. If we could just get these truths down in our hearts, as we feed upon it, little by little it will become a part of our inner consciousness. Once it does, it will be said of us as it was in the Old Testament, "there are giants in the land"- these truths will make us spiritual giants. The key is believing with the heart, but the Word goes through our heads first before they get into our spirit. Our mind is the door to our heart. Once these truths dawn on our hearts, we will become spiritual giants. The Church has caught a glimpse of these things, but has really yet to fully enter into it- that is when the exploits come. As we continually feed along these lines and live in this place, it will become a lifestyle of living in our dominion in the Name of Jesus according to Philippians 2- every knee must bow!

Heaven, earth and hell recognize what Jesus did in those three worlds. All that Jesus did, all His power, authority, deity, achievements are in His Name. His Name spoken from our lips will work the same way now as it did for the early church. These things will not work if we try to exercise it from a purely head knowledge standpoint, or just because we try it. That Name works in all three worlds because that is what we deal with on a daily basis- loose things from heaven (Lord's prayer), bind things on earth concerning the works of darkness.

In the Name of Jesus, we can break the power of the devil over unbelievers and claim their salvation. However, this won't work until we get the revelation of it in our spirit. This revelation won't come without studying, feeding and meditating on God's Word concerning the subject. As we study this material, we may not get the revelation of it immediately, but if we continue to feed, study and meditate along these lines, sooner or later it will dawn on our spirit and will work in our life like second nature. However, if we throw it away and give up on it, it will never work for us. Let's continually pray Ephesians 1:17 that we may know this power that is for us who believe!

Jesus is Lord of the three worlds and so are we in Christ through His Name. The key is the opening of our spiritual eyes, that they may be enlightened. Seek the knowledge of God's Word. God's Word works from the heart of man because the Bible is a spiritual book. The mind can take a picture of what is in our heart so we can reference it and make mention of it, but the working and operations of spiritual truths comes out of our spirit; that is where the kingdom of God is, within us- according to Luke 17:21. When we read Ephesians 1:20-23, we see that the Father made Jesus Head over all things for the Church for our benefit. So the Church can walk in this realm of authority.

In the Name of Jesus, is found the fullness of the Godhead, the wealth of the eternities and the love of the heart of the Father God. That Name is given to us, to use it against devil, in prayers, praise and worship. That is only the beginning of the wonders of the greatness and the value of that Name.

Ephesians 3:10-11

His intent was that now, through the church, the manifold wisdom of God should be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms, according to his eternal purpose which he accomplished in Christ Jesus our Lord.

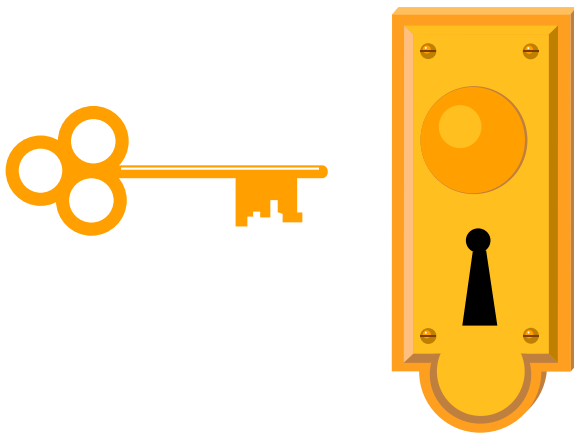
Mental assent, parroting the Name or just trying it will not work. When we know what the Word says and act on it from our heart it will work. Sticking with it no matter what the circumstances look like.

Four Fold right to use the Name

Let's look at four reasons why we have a right to use the Name of Jesus:

1. We are born into the family of God and the Name of Jesus belongs to the family.
2. We have been baptized into Christ, His body through the Holy Spirit when we were born again according to 1 Corinthians 12:13.
3. The Name of Jesus was conferred upon us by Jesus, who gave us the power of attorney to use His Name on His behalf in Mark 16:15-18.
4. We are commissioned as His Ambassadors to go and herald this Name among the nations according to Matthew 28:18.

Since this Name has been conferred upon us, we don't have to ask for permission to use the Name of Jesus. It has already been given to us, the use of the Name of Jesus is ours to use as children of God- it is legally ours and cannot be challenged! If I had a thousand dollars in the bank, that money is already mine, I don't have to apply for it or ask special permission to have access to it. Faith is the creative force



of God to take God's Word which is unseen and transform it into the substance or realization of what I want in the seen realm. Faith in God's Word is the action of making a withdrawal on what I need according to the Promises of God that are "Yes" in Christ. This principle of faith applies to anything that already belongs to us in redemption- healing, peace, prosperity etc. Exercising faith to receive in this context, is achieved by just claiming the reality of it in our lives in the Name of Jesus. In so doing, we are making withdrawals on an unlimited account- our redemption account cannot be overdrawn! In the case

of the Name of Jesus, I don't have to hope for it, I already have it, it already belongs to me, it's already in my possession like that thousand dollars in the bank account. All that is left for me to do now is just make a demand on the Name for the purpose of establishing God's will in the world. However, cashing in on the Name of Jesus is not automatic any more than us accessing our money from the bank. I have to learn what is involved in making such a withdrawal, there are actions I have to take, principles that must be followed. The Bible gives us such guidelines on how to activate the Name of Jesus. This training is absolutely crucial in the successful deployment and operation of the Name. A lack of knowledge in this area will ensure defeat as much as it does in our everyday life in this world. The Word of God is our instruction book, follow those directions and we are guaranteed success. In the natural, a bank on this earth is a secure place to keep treasure safe. Spiritually speaking God has placed all the treasure of the kingdom of God in our spirit, inside of us- our very own spirit man is the vault.

Luke 17:20-21

Once, having been asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, Jesus replied, “The kingdom of God does not come with your careful observation, nor will people say, ‘Here it is,’ or ‘There it is,’ because the kingdom of God is within you.”

2 Corinthians 1:21-22

Now it is God who makes both us and you stand firm in Christ. He anointed us, set his seal of ownership on us, and put his Spirit in our hearts as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

2 Corinthians 4:7

But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all-surpassing power is from God and not from us.

2 Corinthians 5:5

Now it is God who has made us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

Ephesians 1:13-14

And you also were included in Christ when you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation. Having believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit, who is a deposit guaranteeing our inheritance until the redemption of those who are God’s possession — to the praise of his glory.

2 Timothy 1:13-14

What you heard from me, keep as the pattern of sound teaching, with faith and love in Christ Jesus. Guard the good deposit that was entrusted to you — guard it with the help of the Holy Spirit who lives in us.

The key to successful Christian living is to take what God has deposited on the inside of us and make it real in our everyday lives for others to see and be blessed.

Ephesians 4:22-24

You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

Colossians 3:9-10

Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

Romans 13:14

Rather, clothe yourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ, and do not think about how to gratify the desires of the sinful nature.

In Jesus is found all the treasures of heaven, and the Name of Jesus is the key (gives access) that unlocks these unlimited resources in our lives. Since Jesus lives in us by the Person of the Holy Spirit, all this unimaginable power, glory and riches of heaven are inside of us just waiting to be released. We just need to speak God’s Word in the Name of Jesus to make a withdrawal, to release the kingdom of God within us on this earth.

Colossians 1:27

To them God has chosen to make known among the Gentiles the glorious riches of this mystery, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

Colossians 2:2-3

My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding, in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

I believe the hour will come when large companies of believers will live this simple life of Faith; live it unconsciously, live it daily- they will live in this upper realm where they will see in the Name of Jesus the fullness of the authority and power that was in Christ when He walked on the earth. We are now in the babyhood stage: we are trying to have faith, without fully understanding what it means. We are trying to believe and we meet together in our services, each one urging the other to do, what he does not do himself. It would seem in many cases that we are practicing a game of bluff.

Are we using Scriptural expressions and high sounding phrases that have no meaning to our spirit? Thank God, there are some who are coming to see this new light, which will only come by intensive study and meditation on the Word of God- building these biblical truths into our spirits as pillars of revelation knowledge. Too many of us are listening to preachers and teachers, getting fat on the Word with head knowledge. These are those whom Jesus had referred to as “hearers of the Word and not doers.” Mentally acquiescing to spiritual truths without them registering on our hearts where they are destined to work and produce life within us that radiates and permeates out of our very being and the world around us!

James 2:20-23, 26

You foolish man, do you want evidence that faith without deeds is useless? Was not our ancestor Abraham considered righteous for what he did when he offered his son Isaac on the altar? You see that his faith and his actions were working together, and his faith was made complete by what he did. As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without deeds is dead.

Matthew 7:24-27

“Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash.”

Luke 8:20-21

Someone told him, “Your mother and brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you.” He replied, “My mother and brothers are those who hear God’s word and put it into practice.”

The secret is found in hiding God’s Word in our hearts; the Word of Faith principle that makes the parable of the sower a reality. As the truth of God’s Word becomes a stronghold in our life, we will begin to rise into a new realm of Life in Christ. When we meet demons, sickness and all manner of oppression on the battle fields for the souls and lives of men, we will conquer them and enforce Satan’s defeat that Jesus accomplished 2,000 years ago. We will be able to enjoy the fruits of the finished work of Christ and enter into the riches of His inheritance of the saints in light.

Let's not just try it, dabble and play with it; let's get serious about God's Word and make it a lifestyle. Standing on God's Word no matter what. If healing belongs to us and it does, let's act like it and talk like it's so. The Name of Jesus makes it available to us. That Name is ours and in that Name is all help, all victory, all power and all health. Do not try, do not struggle, just use it. Use that Name with the same freedom that you use your check book, because it already belongs to you. Speaking the Name through a revelation of what it means in your heart is all that is required.

Acts 4:12- "Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved."

Parroting the Name of Jesus like second hand information will produce no results. We must develop our faith in the Name through God's Word. It needs to become an unconscious kind of faith that is in operation in our everyday life, it becomes instinctive or second nature to speak the Name in every life situation. This faith in the Name gets in our hearts by extensive study and meditation on the Word of God. Building this revelation of the Name in our spirit must become a priority for our lives. Mouthing the Name of Jesus like a parrot says "Polly wants another cracker" will produce no results.

Acts 19:13-17

Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, "In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out." Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. [One day] the evil spirit answered them, "Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?" Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding. When this became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor.

So what does it mean to believe with our heart or how do we know God's Word has been hidden in our heart and not just our head? In Romans 4:21, when faith gets in our spirit, we become fully persuaded, in the face of extreme contradictory circumstances. Faith operating from the spirit of the believer will look death straight in the eye and deny it any claim, right or place in one's life. It is fearless, unmovable, solid as a rock, an anchor for the soul.

Romans 4:18-21

Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead — since he was about a hundred years old — and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, **being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.**

Hebrews 6:16-19

Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument. Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was promised, he confirmed it with an oath. God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to take hold of the hope offered to us may be greatly encouraged. We have this hope as **an anchor for the soul, firm and secure.**

At the Second Coming of Christ, it will not require any act of faith on our part; neither will it require any effort to receive our new glorified bodies. These events are driven solely by God's Sovereign will, believe it or not, these events will surely come to pass. However, believing the Word in advance concerning these things provide a great benefit of hope and assurance concerning the future and motivation to persevere for the present.

These things among many others are part of God's eternal program and nothing can stop them from coming to pass. However, God does solicit our involvement in His program like a natural father includes his children in the family business, so it is in God's Family. God is about bringing salvation to a lost and dying world, and we are privileged with the task of representing the Kingdom of God on this earth and to make disciples of all nations.

Matthew 24:14

And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.

When it comes to the Name of Jesus, we need Biblical understanding of what it means and how to use it. The Bible is our instruction book for all things that pertain to life and conduct. When we were born into the Family of God, the right to use the Name and the privilege to use it came to us through the new birth. Today, the works of Jesus can still be seen in the world when believers speak His Name. The wonderful ministry of setting the captives free, Jesus began 2,000 years ago, continues on through His Body all around the world. The devil thought he had problems with one Jesus long ago, since then he has had to deal with millions of Spirit-anointed Christians following in the Master's footsteps- they're everywhere, they're everywhere! In other words, today Jesus multiplies Himself as rapidly as He multiplies the Church throughout the world. For the weakest member of His Body today, has as much legal right to all the grace, might, power, blessing, health, healing, and life enwrapped in the Name of Jesus as the Person who bore that Name 2,000 years ago.

John 12:23-25

Jesus replied, "The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds."

- All that Jesus was, His Name is!
- All that Jesus was, that Name will ever be during this dispensation!
- That Name has lost none of the power of the Man who bore it!

All the authority that is invested in that Name is given to us to bring glory to the Father, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. His Name being present in our lives is equivalent to Him being present. His Name will do all that Jesus would have done during His life and ministry on earth.

If a person does not know what a car is and is given keys to a new car, they will not know what to do with it or realize any benefit from having a car given to them. However, given some training on how to drive a car and maximize it, this understanding of automobiles will transform their life. The Name of Jesus belongs to every believer, but until we have received revelation knowledge of what and how the Name works, it will have no effect in our lives- even though the awesome potential is there!

What does the Name mean to the Father, to the Church, and to Satan?

To the Father, it must mean more than our hearts or minds will ever grasp, but we can suggest a little of the wealth that the Father has stored in that Name!

Colossians 1:25-29; 2:2-4

I have become its servant by the commission God gave me to present to you the word of God in its fullness—the mystery that has been kept hidden for ages and generations, but is now disclosed to the saints. To them God has chosen to make known among the Gentiles **the glorious riches of this mystery, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory. We proclaim him, admonishing and teaching everyone with all wisdom, so that we may present everyone perfect in Christ. To this end I labor, struggling with all his energy, which so powerfully works in me. My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, so that they may have the **full riches of complete understanding**, in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ, in whom are **hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge**.**

When Jesus gave us the legal right to use His Name, the Father knew all that the Name would imply when breathed in prayer by His children, and it's His joy to recognize that Name. The Name also is available for unbelievers to call upon to receive salvation and deliverance from the authority of darkness.

Romans 10:12-13

For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile — the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all who call on him, for, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

Acts 4:12- “Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved.”

His Name is equivalent to Himself: Luke 9:48 NKJV, *“Whoever receives this little child in My name receives Me; and whoever receives Me receives Him who sent Me. For he who is least among you all will be great.”*

In Ephesians 1:17 we find a prayer given to the Church by the Holy Spirit, through the Apostle Paul—primarily that we may receive spiritual revelation of what God the Father has done for us in Jesus. This prayer not only reveals aspects of our glorious redemption, but also when prayed paves the way for us to receive spiritual wisdom concerning it. Clearly, it's the Father's desire that we come to know and experience the fullness of His Grace manifest through Jesus in His death, burial and resurrection.

Ephesians 1:15-23

For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints, I have not stopped giving thanks for you, remembering you in my prayers. I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better. I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may **know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in the saints, and **his incomparably great power for us who believe**. That power is like the working of his mighty strength, which he exerted in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms, far above all rule and authority, power and dominion, and every title that can be given, not only in the present age but also in the one to come. And God placed all things under his feet and appointed him to be head over everything for the church, which is his body, the fullness of him who fills everything in every way.**

A prayer for the impartation of spiritual wisdom and revelation that we may know:

- 1- Him better
- 2- The hope to which He has called us
- 3- The riches of His glorious inheritance
- 4- His incomparable great power for us who believe

God has given to Jesus the Name that has within it the fullness of the Godhead, the wealth of the eternities, and love from the heart of the Father-God: and that Name was given to us as our right to:

- 1- Receive salvation
- 2- To be healed in our bodies
- 3- Use that Name against our enemies- kingdom of darkness
- 4- Use it in our prayer of petition
- 5- Use in our praise and worship



Jesus

The power in the Name of Jesus that has been given to us can be compared with the same power that God the Father used when He had raised Jesus Christ from the dead. At that time, all the kingdom of darkness was trying to oppose the resurrection. That power also seated Jesus at the Father's own right hand, the highest place in the universe. That power is all contained in the Name of Jesus. When we speak the Name we release the Power!

The Father knows the power behind that Name that is spoken from the lips of people, and the Father will back it up- there is power in the Name of Jesus. When the Name of Jesus is used in the prayer of petition, it's like God is giving us a signed check on the resources of heaven and is asking us to fill in the amount. Folks trying to be humble will write just \$2.50- Jesus said, ask and you shall receive in John 16:24. Small checks are written due to a small vision of Jesus and His Name. Jesus signed a blank check and gave it to us. We have lived on such a low level of life. Whenever we give a hard luck story, or talk about how sick we are, or what a hard time we're having with trials, we are bragging on the devil- remember that he is the author of all those things. We need to study all we can concerning the Name of Jesus in the New Testament, because it will change our lives.

The Name is the Key

I like using the key analogy, it's worth repeating but from another angle this time. You have a car key in your pocket and you can unlock the door, you have access. When you use the key you can get in the car and drive off. Without the key you could not get in and drive the car. So did you pray about the key, hoping that it would work. Turn in a prayer request, "folks pray for me that this car key of mine will work, pray that I'll have enough faith to use it." You don't think about it, you just use it. Remember, the key is yours and the car is yours, it's the key that does the work. Jesus has given us the key through His Name, you are not going to heal them without the key. So, no pressure, since you can't heal them by yourself, just let the key do the work, let the power invested in the Name of Jesus deliver them from sickness and disease- what a rest in God that we have! The Name of Jesus is the key, it's already mine, I don't have to ask for it. Jesus gave me His Name, the Key that unlocks heaven- authority to bind and loose in His Name. So let's anoint them with oil in the Name of the Lord according to James 5:14!

7. The Use of the Name

It would behoove us to see in the Scriptures how the Name of Jesus was used as it pertains to the plan of salvation and its relation to the believer in his/her Christian life.

Matthew 1:21-23

"She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins." All this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: "The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel"-which means, "God with us."

The Name "Jesus" is inseparably connected with salvation; Acts 4:12 is one of my favorite Scriptures. Only through the Name of Jesus can a sinner come to God and receive salvation. John 14:6, "*Jesus answered, 'I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.'*" Christianity would have a new element about it if we taught the people according to the Word what it meant to believe ON the Name as a sinner and then to believe IN the Name as a believer. As a believer, I am baptized INTO His Name (Romans 6:3; 1 Corinthians 12:13), and then I walk and live IN the Name (Acts 3:16).

Salvation:

Luke 24:46-48 NKJV

Then He said to them, "Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day, and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem."

John 1:12-13

Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God— children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

John 3:18

Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son.

Acts 2:38

Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

Acts 4:12

“Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved.”

Romans 10:9-10

That if you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

1 Corinthians 6:11

But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

1 John 2:12

I write to you, dear children, because your sins have been forgiven on account of his name.

1 John 3:23-24

And this is his command: to believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and to love one another as he commanded us.

The command in 1 John 3:23 that we should believe in the Name, literally means that we should believe the Name- the preposition “in” is not in the Greek. That we should believe the Name; believe it for what it stands for; believe it for all that it means in the heart of the Father- that we believe the Name!

1 John 5:13-14

I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.

Water Baptism:

Acts 2:38

Peter replied, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.”

Matthew 28:19

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

Acts 10:48- So he ordered that they be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

Not only are we saved by the Name, but the believer is water baptized into the Name. In Acts 2:38, we also see that through the Name, the gift of the Holy Spirit is made available. Water baptism symbolizes a break from the world and a new identification with the Name of Jesus. This includes all the stigma from the world and all the recognition of heaven.

Prayer of Petition:

John 15:16

You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit — fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.

John 16:23-24

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete.

John 16:26- In that day you will ask in my name.

Ephesians 5:20

Always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Matthew 18:5- And whoever welcomes a little child like this in my name welcomes me.

This is the first time that man had ever been taught to pray in the Name of a Mediator. Here, Jesus gives His disciples the unique privilege of praying in His Name. Up to that time, they had prayer through the High Priest; now, they were to pray through this new High Priest. Wherever they go, whatever they do, they are to carry with them the Name of this One Who is seated at the right hand of the Father. Jesus says that the Father is glorified in the Son by our praying and asking in His Name. Jesus is seated at the right hand of the Father to endorse our petitions when they come up to the Father in His Name.

This is the great charter promise in the Name of Jesus Christ. In this we can plainly see the legal foundation for a wonderful prayer life for the Church, a legal right to use the Name of Jesus without any restrictions. If we are children of God, all that is in that Name belongs to us. It is not a question of our worthiness or lack thereof: it is a question of His standing in heaven on our behalf, and as sons and daughters of the Most High, we can take our place and claim our rights in this glorious inheritance.

Healing:**Acts 3:6-8**

Then Peter said, "Silver or gold I do not have, but what I have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk." Taking him by the right hand, he helped him up, and instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong. He jumped to his feet and began to walk.

Acts 3:16

By faith in the name of Jesus, this man whom you see and know was made strong. It is Jesus' name and the faith that comes through him that has given this complete healing to him, as you can all see.

Acts 9:33-35

There he found a man named Aeneas, a paralytic who had been bedridden for eight years. "Aeneas," Peter said to him, "Jesus Christ heals you. Get up and take care of your mat." Immediately Aeneas got up. All those who lived in Lydda and Sharon saw him and turned to the Lord.

James 5:14-15

Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven.

The Early Church uses the Name of Jesus in connection with the sick; it would seem that they did not pray for the sick per-se, but rather they would have laid their hands upon them in Jesus' Name, or as at the "Beautiful Gate," they said, "In the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise and walk."

At Paul's conversion in Acts 9:15-16 where God was sending Ananias to baptize Paul, He says this:

Acts 9:15-16

But the Lord said to Ananias, "Go! This man is my chosen instrument to carry my name before the Gentiles and their kings and before the people of Israel. I will show him how much he must suffer for my name."

That Name of Jesus became the impetus for Paul's ministry to the Gentiles. The Name was in the hands of Paul like the rod was in the hand of Moses. Now, if the Gentiles and Jews could have stopped the Early Church from using the Name of Jesus, they would have robbed the Church of its supernatural power, and like Sampson when his hair was cut, they would have become as common men.

Acts 9:27-28

But Barnabas took him and brought him to the apostles. He told them how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord and that the Lord had spoken to him, and how in Damascus he had preached fearlessly **in the name of Jesus. So Saul stayed with them and moved about freely in Jerusalem, speaking boldly in the name of the Lord.**

Demand of the Devil:

John 14:12-14

I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask (*demand*) me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

Acts 16:18

Finally Paul became so troubled that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her.

Acts 19:13

Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, "In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out."

Paul's ministry in the Name of Jesus was so outstanding, the miracles so pronounced, that even wicked men and sorcerers attempted to use it. Through that Name, mighty things were worked, which brought much glory to God and to the furtherance of the Gospel throughout the known world at that time. Isn't it ironic that at one time Paul had tried to destroy the Name- Acts 26:9, "*I too was convinced that I ought to do all that was possible to oppose the name of Jesus of Nazareth.*" From this Scripture we see that all of Christianity is contained in the Name of Jesus. That Name has lost none of its authority, none of its power. The Name of Jesus belongs to us NOW!

Mark 16:17

"And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons..."

Luke 10:17

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, "Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name."

Matthew 18:19-20

“Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three come together in my name, there am I with them.”

Mark 9:38-41

“Teacher,” said John, “we saw a man driving out demons in your name and we told him to stop, because he was not one of us.” “Do not stop him,” Jesus said. “No one who does a miracle in my name can in the next moment say anything bad about me, for whoever is not against us is for us. I tell you the truth, anyone who gives you a cup of water in my name because you belong to Christ will certainly not lose his reward.”

Church Discipline:

2 Thessalonians 3:6-7

In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers, to keep away from every brother who is idle and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.

1 Corinthians 1:10

I appeal to you, brothers, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that all of you agree with one another so that there may be no divisions among you and that you may be perfectly united in mind and thought.

1 Corinthians 5:4-5

When you are assembled in the name of our Lord Jesus and I am with you in spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus is present, hand this man over to Satan, so that the sinful nature may be destroyed and his spirit saved on the day of the Lord.

2 Thessalonians 3:12

Such people we command and urge in the Lord Jesus Christ to settle down and earn the bread they eat.

Preach & Teach:

Acts 4:18-20

Then they called them in again and commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John replied, “Judge for yourselves whether it is right in God’s sight to obey you rather than God. For we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard.”

Acts 5:40

They called the apostles in and had them flogged. Then they ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

Acts 9:27-28

He had preached fearlessly in the name of Jesus. So Saul stayed with them and moved about freely in Jerusalem, speaking boldly in the name of the Lord.

Acts 15:26

Men who have risked their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Colossians 3:17

And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

The early church was threatened not to preach or teach in the Name of Jesus more than once. What a strange hush must have come upon the hearts of the disciples when they realized as they gathered in their little home meetings that that Name was the center around which everything revolved! That their prayers were addressed through that Name and in that Name the sick were healed. It was in that Name that demons were cast out and in that Name they worshipped God. All the work of the early church was done in the Name of Jesus.

Hebrews 13:15-16

Through Jesus, therefore, let us continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise — the fruit of lips that confess his name. And do not forget to do good and to share with others, for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

Mark 16:17-18

“And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well.”

In the Name of Jesus Christians will:

- 1- Drive out demons
- 2- Speak in new tongues- be baptized with the Holy Spirit
- 3- If they should eat or drink deadly poison it will not hurt them at all
- 4- Place their hands on the sick, and in the Name of Jesus drive it out and they will get well

Colossians 3:17

And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

Ephesians 5:20

Always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Corinthians 1:2

To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus and called to be holy, together with all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ — their Lord and ours.

Obviously we can see through these Scriptures, the prominent role that the Name of Jesus had within the early church; it was interwoven within the very fabric of their faith and should be with us today! The Name of Jesus touched every phase of church life; taking precedence in their thoughts, prayer and in their preaching. Sadly, the Church today is on the most part ignorant of the power invested in the Name of Jesus. May the Lord open the eyes of our hearts that we may know the riches of the glory of God that are hidden in that Name. All Jesus was, all He did, all He is and all that He will ever will be is in that Name for us to use now. He purchased healing for us; He is healing for us now. He satisfied the claims of justice and became our righteousness- He is our righteousness now. He tasted death for every person so we can be partakers of the Life of God (Eternal Life- receiving the nature of God through the new birth) now- He is our Life now.

He gave us life and He is that Life He gave. He is healing, He is health, He is victory, He is our all and in all- *Acts 17:28, "For in him we live and move and have our being."*

1 Corinthians 1:30-31

It is because of him that you are in Christ Jesus, who has become for us wisdom from God — that is, our righteousness, holiness and redemption. Therefore, as it is written: "Let him who boasts boast in the Lord."

2 Corinthians 5:21

God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

And when He gave us the right to use His Name to heal the sick, it was simply that we might bring on the scene by the use of that Name the fullness of His finished work and show forth His glory by continuing His ministry of destroying the works of Satan and setting the captives free.

Luke 4:16-21

He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue, as was his custom. And he stood up to read. The scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written:

**"The Spirit of the Lord is on me,
because he has anointed me
to preach good news to the poor.
He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners
and recovery of sight for the blind,
to release the oppressed,
to proclaim the year of the Lord's favor."**

Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him, and he began by saying to them, "Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing."

John 14:12-14

I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

Do you See the Connection between Luke 4:16-21 and John 14:12-14

1 John 2:20, 27

But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and all of you know the truth. As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit — just as it has taught you, remain in him.

Matthew 10:8

Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.

Unit 7 Review:

What does it mean to get a “Revelation” of the Name of Jesus?

The Name of Jesus is a “Key” that unlocks what in our lives and in the earth?

Is the Name of Jesus available to unbelievers to use?

What is significant about the “Key” illustration as it pertains to speaking the Name of Jesus?

How did the Early Church minister to the sick according to the Bible?

What if the gentiles and religious leaders had succeeded in silencing the Early Church from using the Name of Jesus?

IV. Spiritual Warfare

1. The Mandate Continues- Setting the Captives Free

God never intended that there should ever be any change in the methods of ministry down through the ages; only as nations developed, should these methods be broadened, but the miraculous element enfolded in the Name of Jesus should be the means of opening closed doors to the Church everywhere; the sick should be healed; the power of Satan broken over men's lives and captives set free. All this is done in the Name of this unseen Savior. There is life in His Name for those who believe in Him!

John 14:12- I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.

Acts 10:38

How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.

1 John 3:8- The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.

Acts 28:3-6

Paul gathered a pile of brushwood and, as he put it on the fire, a viper, driven out by the heat, fastened itself on his hand. When the islanders saw the snake hanging from his hand, they said to each other, "This man must be a murderer; for though he escaped from the sea, Justice has not allowed him to live." **But Paul shook the snake off into the fire and suffered no ill effects. The people expected him to swell up or suddenly fall dead, but after waiting a long time and seeing nothing unusual happen to him, they changed their minds and said he was a god.**

John 20:29-31

Then Jesus told him, "Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed." Jesus did many other miraculous signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not recorded in this book. But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that **by believing you may have life in his name.**

Jesus is the only hope for the world, He is the solution for all our social ills. If any nation would truly put their trust in Him, what an impact that would have on all aspects of society. As nations walk away from the light of Jesus Christ, the only thing left is to walk into darkness, confusion and misery.

Matthew 12:17-21

This was to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah: "Here is my servant whom I have chosen, the one I love, in whom I delight; I will put my Spirit on him, and he will proclaim justice to the nations. He will not quarrel or cry out; no one will hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering wick he will not snuff out, till he leads justice to victory. **In his name the nations will put their hope."**

Proverbs 14:34 AMP

Uprightness and right standing with God (moral and spiritual rectitude in every area and relation) elevate a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people.

2. The Name of Jesus – Still Controversial

Jesus knew the place His Name would hold among men. Men would love it enough to die for it; others would hate it enough to commit murder on account of it- this Name that makes demons tremble and saints rejoice. It's no wonder that sinners use that Name in vain when they curse God. Have you noticed the ungodly are selective about using the Name of Jesus in their curses, they do not say, "Well Buddha, why did that happen!" or "Oh Mohammad, not again!" Since the Name of Jesus holds real power, it make sense for Satan to urge his followers to use it in a sacrilegious manner.

Matthew 12:31-37

And so I tell you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven. Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but anyone who speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in this age or in the age to come. "Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad, for a tree is recognized by its fruit. You brood of vipers, how can you who are evil say anything good? For out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks. The good man brings good things out of the good stored up in him, and the evil man brings evil things out of the evil stored up in him. But I tell you that men will have to give account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned."

When the crippled man at the Gate Beautiful was healed through the Name of Jesus, the Sanhedrin wanted to know what power or what means they used, or by what name they had done that mighty act.



The priests and the captain of the temple guard and the Sadducees came up to Peter and John while they were speaking to the people. They were greatly disturbed because the apostles were teaching the people and proclaiming in Jesus the resurrection of the dead. They had Peter and John brought before them and began to question them: "By what power or what name did you do this?" Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them: "Rulers and elders of the people! If we are being called to account today for an act of kindness shown to a cripple and are asked how he was healed, then know this, you and all the people of Israel: **It is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified but whom God raised from the dead, that this man stands before you healed. He is 'the stone you builders rejected, which has become the capstone.' Salvation is found in no one else, for there is **no other Name** under heaven given to men by which we must be saved."**

Acts 4:1-2, 7-12

I love the irony here, these two humble fishermen, Peter and John, filled with the Holy Spirit and speaking the Name of Jesus, standing before all the greatest and wisest in all of Israel. An outstanding miracle had been performed and they could not deny it, explain it or accept it because it was done in the Name they had denounced and crucified. The only thing they could do is breathe out threats to not speak in this Name. They were terrified of the power of the Name. Have you ever noticed the world does not care if you talk about "God" as a general term or "A higher power," but look out when you speak the Name of Jesus- folks get offended, bent out of shape and hostile when they hear that Name. It's because the demons that are dominating their lives freak out when they hear the Wonderful Name of Jesus!

Acts 4:13-20

When they saw the courage of Peter and John and realized that they were unschooled, ordinary men, they were astonished and they took note that these men had been with Jesus. But since they could see the man who had been healed standing there with them, there was nothing they could say. So they ordered them to withdraw from the Sanhedrin and then conferred together. “What are we going to do with these men?” they asked. “Everybody living in Jerusalem knows they have done an outstanding miracle, and we cannot deny it. But to stop this thing from spreading any further among the people, we must warn these men **to speak no longer to anyone in this Name.**” Then they called them in again and **commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus.** But Peter and John replied, “Judge for yourselves whether it is right in God’s sight to obey you rather than God. For we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard.”

This is just how God does things, how He rolls if you will. He is God and is due all the glory for He is worthy of it all! So what better way to accent His glory then by choosing common vessels, regular ole folks that are not in any way special in the eyes of the world- wise, talented or influential.

1 Corinthians 1:26-30

Brothers, think of what you were when you were called. Not many of you were wise by human standards; not many were influential; not many were of noble birth. But God chose the foolish things of the world to shame the wise; God chose the weak things of the world to shame the strong. He chose the lowly things of this world and the despised things — and the things that are not — to nullify the things that are, so that no one may boast before him.

Luke 10:21

At that time Jesus, full of joy through the Holy Spirit, said, “I praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for this was your good pleasure.”

Acts 17:6 NKJV

But when they did not find them, they dragged Jason and some brethren to the rulers of the city, crying out, “These who have turned the world upside down have come here too.”

Acts 17:30-31

“In the past God overlooked such ignorance, but now he commands all people everywhere to repent. For he has set a day when he will judge the world with justice by the man he has appointed. He has given proof of this to all men by raising him from the dead.”

So what was the response of the early church in the face of persecution- simple, more Lord, more signs and wonders through your Name! The disciples now expected that signs and wonders were to follow the preaching of the Gospel in the Name of Jesus.

Matthew 10:22-23 NKJV

“And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake. But he who endures to the end will be saved.”

John 16:2-4

“They will put you out of the synagogue; in fact, a time is coming when anyone who kills you will think he is offering a service to God. They will do such things because they have not known the Father or me. I have told you this, so that when the time comes you will remember that I warned you. I did not tell you this at first because I was with you.”

Acts 4:29-31

“Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. Stretch out your hand to heal and perform miraculous signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus.” After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.”

Acts 5:12, 16

The apostles performed many miraculous signs and wonders among the people. Crowds gathered also from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing their sick and those tormented by evil spirits, and all of them were healed.

I would like for you to note that persecution from religious folks is rooted in envy and jealousy because God will not sanction their traditions and religious dogma- as it was with Cain and Abel in Genesis chapter 4. Abel was following God in simple obedience, while Cain arrogantly presumed his own way and was rejected. Well God had no choice but to honor Abel's obedience and reject Cain's defiance.

Matthew 27:18- For he knew it was **out of envy that they had handed Jesus over to him.**

Acts 5:17-20

Then the high priest and all his associates, who were members of the party of the Sadducees, were **filled with jealousy. They arrested the apostles and put them in the public jail. But during the night an angel of the Lord opened the doors of the jail and brought them out. “Go, stand in the temple courts,” he said, “and tell the people the full message of this new life.”**

Acts 13:45

When the Jews saw the crowds, they were **filled with jealousy and talked abusively against what Paul was saying.**

As a result, Cain being jealous of God accepting Abel, murdered his brother; this my friend was the first murder over religion. Yet God had originally encouraged Cain to do the right thing and obey Him. If he would have just submitted and followed God's way he would have been accepted. Yet Cain persisted in unbelief- a stubborn refusal to accept the truth.

Genesis 4:6-7

Then the Lord said to Cain, “Why are you angry? Why is your face downcast? **If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.”**

Matthew 23:33-39

“You snakes! You brood of vipers! How will you escape being condemned to hell? Therefore I am sending you prophets and wise men and teachers. Some of them you will kill and crucify; others you will flog in your synagogues and pursue from town to town. And so upon you will come all the righteous blood that has been shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Berekiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. I tell you the truth, all this will come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were not willing. Look, your house is left to you desolate. For I tell you, you will not see me again until you say, ‘Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord.’”

No student can read the Book of Acts without being impressed with the large place the Name of Jesus held with the early church. When it came to preaching the Gospel, the central truth was a declaration of the Name of Jesus which is at the core of the Salvation message. In Vines Expository Dictionary, the Name “Jesus” is a transliteration of the Hebrew “Joshua,” meaning “Jehovah is salvation,” or “is the Savior.”

Matthew 1:21

“She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name **Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.”**

Obviously, the early church devoted a lot of time to instructing the people in regard to the use of the Name of Jesus. They must have understood that they had what we would call today, a legal right to us the Name of Jesus- delegated authority!

3. Enforcing Satan’s Defeat

Have you ever noticed how throughout the ministry of Jesus that He had regularly encountered the devil and evil spirits and put them in their place- casting them out of the lives and bodies of people! Sad to say that one would naturally think in reading our modern religious literature and listening to the average preacher’s sermon, that demons had gone out of existence, or else they had been herded together in the slums of inner city neighborhoods and were spending their entire time among the lower strata of humanity or in third world countries.

The reality is that the Bible has a lot to say about demons, their habits, influence and power over men. For starters, consider the ministry of Jesus:

Acts 10:37-38

You know what has happened throughout Judea, beginning in Galilee after the baptism that John preached— how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and **healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.**

1 John 3:8

The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil’s work.

Luke 13:10-16

On a Sabbath Jesus was teaching in one of the synagogues, and a woman was there who had been **crippled by a spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not straighten up at all. When Jesus saw her, he called her forward and said to her, “Woman, you are set free from your infirmity.” Then he put his hands on her, and immediately she straightened up and praised God. Indignant because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath, the synagogue ruler said to the people, “There are six days for work. So come and be healed on those days, not on the Sabbath.” The Lord answered him, “You hypocrites! Doesn’t each of you on the Sabbath untie his ox or donkey from the stall and lead it out to give it water? Then should not this woman, a daughter of Abraham, **whom Satan has kept bound for eighteen long years**, be set free on the Sabbath day from what bound her?”**

On a side note, the Bible teaches that healing in reality is spiritual warfare! Sickness and disease is Satanic oppression (according to Acts 10:38) either directly by the presence of a spirit of infirmity or indirectly through the fall and introduction of sin and death in the world. So when it comes to ministering to the sick, whether we are dealing directly or indirectly with the devil we demand in the Name of Jesus rather than offer a prayer of petition. There is no question as to God's will when it comes to dealing with the devil in folks lives- cast the sickness out, rebuke it and command it to leave in Jesus' Name!

Luke 4:38-39

Jesus left the synagogue and went to the home of Simon. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever, and they asked Jesus to help her. So he bent over her and rebuked the fever, and it left her. She got up at once and began to wait on them.

Mark 9:25

When Jesus saw that a crowd was running to the scene, he rebuked the evil spirit. "You deaf and mute spirit," he said, "I command you, come out of him and never enter him again."

I believe that part of the rebuke that Jesus gave the Pharisees was in regards to their position as experts of the law. Notice the point Jesus made concerning healing in regards to, "*Then should not this woman, a daughter of Abraham...*" inferring that healing already belonged to her under the Abrahamic Covenant. Jehovah Rapha, one of God's redemptive names meaning "The Lord my healer!" There are scores of healing promises under the Old Covenant. Why didn't these religious leaders teach her about her rights and privileges as a daughter of Abraham concerning healing? Clearly they had seriously dropped the ball and were derelict and incompetent in their duties in ministering to the sick and oppressed. Unfortunately today, professional clergy are just as guilty as the religious leaders of old, bound by human traditions and embalmed in unbelief, impotent to do much good for suffering people.

2 Timothy 3:5

"Having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them."

Nowhere in the ministry of Jesus (which is our model for us to follow today) did He have to ask God's will on whether or not He should heal folks. For Jesus, getting people healed and saved were equally important. If people die before they can get saved, what's the point. Everywhere Jesus went, He was healing folks left, right and center- He was a healing machine! Jesus is the same yesterday, today and forever according to Hebrews 13:8. Today His healing ministry continues through His Body of believers, who use His Name to lay hands on the sick and cast out demons.

Matthew 8:1-3

When he came down from the mountainside, large crowds followed him. A man with leprosy came and knelt before him and said, "Lord, if you are willing, you can make me clean." Jesus reached out his hand and touched the man. "I am willing," he said. "Be clean!" Immediately he was cured of his leprosy.

This Scripture alone should end the debate, "Is it always God's will for folks to be healed?" It is, just as much His will for all people to be healed as it is for them to be saved, without exception! The only time Jesus was limited in ministering healing to the sick was when folks had a lack of faith to receive- it's the same today, Mark 6:5-6, "*He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. And he was amazed at their lack of faith.*" Come to think of it, it also takes faith for people to get born again as was well- interesting! It seems that faith is an important ingredient in receiving anything from God according to the Bible.

Who do you think is behind medical science, vaccines and other technologies that improve and prolong human life; that's right God is behind extending life and Satan wants to shorten it- John 10:10. We know that the wages of sin is death in Romans 6:23, and the effects of death on a person are three fold- spirit, soul and body. From a physical point of view, a lifestyle of habitual sin will age a person and cause them to meet the grave at a early age- just look how drug and alcohol abuse causes folks to age terribly.

Proverbs 10:27- The fear of the Lord adds length to life, but the years of the wicked are cut short.

Ministering healing to the sick and afflicted is to engage in spiritual warfare against the devil. I have heard of folks getting healed by just speaking the Name of Jesus over and over again, no one was asking God for healing. There is no need to pray about something that is already God's will. We just need to enforce Satan's defeat, serve that diabolical disease an eviction notice, "Come out, you foul cancer in the Name of Jesus! This body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, how dare you desecrate it with your presence!" Sickness is like spiritual graffiti, to mar, distort and disfigure the object of God's love-people. Realizing that Satan can't get back at God directly, he indirectly tries to get away with murder against God's children by some wasting disease, if they allow him to. It's not God's will for His children to be sick any more than it is for sinners to go to hell. Let's get busy going about ministering the healing virtue that is found in the mighty Name of Jesus to the physically oppressed.



Acts 10:38

How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.

James 5:14-16

Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

Let's learn the secret of taking a permanent place in our rights and privileges and live in the authority invested in the Name of Jesus and enjoy the fullness of this mighty power. In the end times there will be a mighty army of believers who will learn the secret of living in the Name. Reigning in life by Jesus Christ over the devil in a victorious resurrection life among men. If our minds could only grasp that Satan is paralyzed, stripped of his armor by the Lord Jesus Christ. Sickness, disease and all satanic oppression are servants of Jesus and us through His Name. In Jesus Name they must leave!

In Matthew 8, the Centurion said to Jesus, "*Just say the word only... I am a man under authority.*" Jesus commended this gentile with greater faith than all those in Israel because this soldier understood the secret of releasing authority is found in speaking words. As a Centurion he commanded 100 men; as a result, he took charge of those men and gave them orders that had to be obeyed. How much more, having been given authority through His Name over all the power of the enemy (Luke 10:19) should we rise up and put the devil in his rightful place, under our feet! Jesus set us far above all the power of the enemy to be master and tell the devil what to do and he has to obey!

Matthew 8:5-11

When Jesus had entered Capernaum, a centurion came to him, asking for help. “Lord,” he said, “my servant lies at home paralyzed and in terrible suffering.”

Jesus said to him, “I will go and heal him.”

The centurion replied, “Lord, I do not deserve to have you come under my roof. **But just say the word, and my servant will be healed.** For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell this one, ‘Go,’ and he goes; and that one, ‘Come,’ and he comes. I say to my servant, ‘Do this,’ and he does it.” When Jesus heard this, he was astonished and said to those following him, “I tell you the truth, **I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith.**”

Luke 10:17-20

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, “Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.” He replied, “I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority **to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you.** However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”

Remember, this delegated authority that has been given to us in the Name of Jesus is for us in the here and now, not in the sweet bye and bye. We don't need spiritual authority when we get to heaven, cause the devil won't be there. Where we need it is here on planet earth; where Satan is currently the god of this world system.

Okay, getting back to the story. In effect, the Centurion was saying to Jesus, “Jesus, I know you are Lord and Master over demons, sickness and diseases, as I am in charge over these hundred men, as a centurion; so as Master over these things, even over the laws of nature, you exercise this authority through commands, as I do. Therefore, for my sick servant to be made well, all you have to do is speak and command him to be well and it will be done.” In this beautiful illustration, we see that the centurion had risen to a higher plane of spiritual appreciation of Jesus than most believers enjoy today.

This is it Folks, the Key to Releasing Authority and Enforcing Satan's Defeat- Speak the Name of Jesus!

The demon Jesus would not deal with- A great illustration from Kenneth E. Hagin

One day, Jesus in a vision appeared to Brother Hagin and was speaking to Him about how to deal with Satan and the demonic, when conveniently a demon happened to barge in on the scene and promptly jumped in between the two of them. This evil spirit, about the size of a monkey just started jumping up and down yelling in a shrill voice “Yakete Yak yak” over and over again and created a smoke screen so brother Hagin could no longer see Jesus. Obviously, the enemy was trying to hinder and keep brother Hagin from hearing the important things that Jesus had to say. Amazingly, Jesus just kept on talking but brother Hagin could only pick out a few words at a time. Perplexed, brother Hagin was wondering why Jesus was allowing this and permitting this demon to interrupt their conversation. Finally in desperation and frustration over the situation, he addressed the demon and commanded it to shut up and stop. Well, that demon just fell to the ground with a big flop and whimpered like a whipped pup. The dark cloud immediately began to disappear so he could see Jesus again. Then he told the devil to leave them in Jesus' Name and it ran off in terror.

Brother Hagin was still wondering in his mind, why didn't Jesus do something about that evil spirit. Well Jesus, of course knowing his thoughts proceeded to answer this question for him. What Jesus said next had upended his theology and mine when I first heard it, and perhaps it will yours as well. Jesus said, "If you had not done something about that, I couldn't." Well Brother Hagin thought he misunderstood Him and asked Him, "Lord, you mean you wouldn't right?" No Jesus said plainly, "I couldn't." This went back and forth a few times. Finally Jesus said empathically "No, couldn't!" Someone would say, don't tell me that there is something Jesus couldn't do, He could do anything. If that was true, He would get everyone saved today and tomorrow we would go into the Millennium.

Nowhere in the New Testament does it say for the believer to pray that God or Jesus would do anything about the devil. As a matter of fact, for the New Covenant believer to pray for God to do something about the devil would be wasting their time! It's easier to think we are turning the responsibility over to the Lord in dealing with the devil, but that is our job now. If we don't deal with him, then nothing will be done.

The least believer so-to-speak in the Body of Christ has just as much authority as any other believer. We are living under the New Covenant, not the Old which was written to spiritual dead people. We need to particularly live in the Epistles of the New Testament. Now, I will back these statements up with some Scripture. When it comes to establishing doctrine we need a few Scriptures on the matter according to the principle outlined in 2 Corinthians 13:1, "*Every matter must be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.*" We have already looked at Luke 10:17-20 but here are some more.

- 1) All authority was given to Jesus who immediately through the power of attorney delegated that authority over to the Church- by saying go into all the world with this authority and preach the gospel.

Matthew 28:18-20

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

- 2) Notice what Jesus said in Mark 16, "These signs will accompany..." So who is the subject of this sentence that signs will follow, God or us? Do we pray that Jesus will speak in other tongues. No then why do we ask Jesus to heal the sick and deal with the devil. It's not Jesus laying His hands on the sick, no we do it, exercising the authority that was given to us on His behalf through His Name- remember WWJD "What Would Jesus Do!"

Mark 16:15-18

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

- 3) In James 4:7, who resists the devil, God or us? Every New Testament writer told the believer to do something about the devil, never to ask God to do something because God has already done everything He is going to do about the devil- so let's enforce his defeat. The Bible is true, if our perception is that the Bible didn't work, than we didn't work it according to directions, otherwise God is a liar and this whole thing called Christianity is a sham. Our feelings on the matter has nothing with our authority, how anointed we are or if God still loves us. Our faith must be in what God's Word says no matter how we feel. We must exercise this authority over the devil for ourselves, no one can do it for us. The very throne of God backs up our authority in Jesus' Name!

James 4:7- Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

The word "flee" here in the Greek means: to run from as in terror – from us, afraid of the Greater one, the Holy Spirit within us according to 1 John 4:4! We have a Big Brother, Jesus who stands behind us and ensures the devil complies when we stand against him. The devil flees from us according to the Bible. I realize for some of us this is hard to accept, because for all those years of being religiously brainwashed with how unworthy we are, incapable, pitiful, just be happy God is letting a miserable sort like me into heaven kind of theology. Trying to be humble, when all we were being was ignorant of New Covenant realities of a glorious redemption that has exalted us to the right hand of God in Jesus Christ according to Ephesians 2:1-10. Let's not be ashamed of what Jesus has done for us, yes we were miserable sinners, but not anymore, by God's grace we are saints, children of the Most High God- let's dwell on that now. Let's start living up to our standing as children of God, gratefully accepting our glorious inheritance in the saints in light- Ephesians 1:17-23. Let's not receive God's Grace in vain for our lives and live under the lies of the devil and our past life- 2 Corinthians 6:1-2; Philippians 3:12-14.

It's sad when we see how much faith that people, even ministers have in the power of the devil. I have faith in the power of God! Don't ever give into fear, the only power the devil has against us is deception and lies. As long as we do not buy into them and accept them, he cannot dominate us. The enemy cannot curse what God has blessed, Balaam tried that when he tried to put a curse on the people of Israel, but it did not work. Surely goodness and mercy will follow and overtake us- Psalms 23. I have faith in God's power in me and over my life to put me over all of life's challenges!

Psalms 23

The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not be in want. He makes me lie down in green pastures, he leads me beside quiet waters, he restores my soul. He guides me in paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for you are with me; your rod and your staff, they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies. You anoint my head with oil; my cup overflows. Surely goodness and love will follow me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever.

- 4) I want you to notice in 1 Peter 5:8, that the devil cannot just devour anyone; yes he acts like a roaring lion, but the Bible does not say that he is one. We can get all the ministers in the world to pray for us and nothing will happen, if we don't learn how to resist the devil for ourselves- there are some things we have to do.

1 Peter 5:8-9

Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. Resist him, standing firm in the faith..."

Notice that Peter is writing to the Church here, not to unbelievers. Rolling over and playing dead or hiding our heads in the sand will not make the devil go away. When we are submitted to God and resist the devil with the Word and the Name of Jesus, he will flee from us. Resist the devil with our faith in God's Word, speaking it out of our mouths as a two edged sword. This belongs to all Christians, we don't have to go and find someone to do it for us. As Christians we all have the same authority, no believer has any more than another. The problem often is found in that we allow things to happen, we don't exercise our authority; by inaction we forfeit our rights- not good! We can carry baby Christians for awhile on our own faith, but they have to learn who they are in Christ and start to appropriate it in their own lives.

Acts 16:16-18

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. This girl followed Paul and the rest of us, shouting, "These men are servants of the Most High God, who are telling you the way to be saved." She kept this up for many days. Finally Paul became so troubled that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her.

Notice that in the above account in the Scriptures that Paul spoke to the spirit, not to the woman who was demon possessed. Ever wonder why Paul did not cast the spirit out immediately. Perhaps the woman did not want to be free at first. One thing is for certain, we can't operate spiritual gifts unless we are in the Spirit (wait for the Holy Spirit to manifest), otherwise it's flesh (by our own accord). It may be that Paul was waiting for a manifestation of discerning of spirits to come into operation according to 1 Corinthians 12:10. When dealing with other people in matters of ministry, there are other dynamics in play as opposed to resisting the devil in our own lives. The other person has to want to be free.

We have the same Name of Jesus today as the apostle Paul did, it's the Name that gets the job done-how we have neglected it. Remember we wrestle not with flesh and blood, we deal with the spirit working through the person. We have authority to bind evil spirits from operating through other folks, in order to keep them from harassing other Christians. We would say to the demon, "You foul spirit that is operating through this person, I command you to cease and desist from your maneuvers and operations in the Name of Jesus." The devil is afraid of the person of Jesus who backs His Name and of the Mighty Holy Spirit who indwells us. Remember, we are dealing with spirits, not individuals.

2 Timothy 2:24-26

And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will.

Joy- the Note of Victory

Sin consciousness robs believers of the victory. Know that Jesus never leaves us or forsakes us. When we hear the whine in people's voices, we have them located, defeated- let's get in the Word. Let's practice the truth whether we feel like it or not. When we know our rights and privileges, we'll be looking for the devil and when he see us coming, he will be the one running away.

The Church has been singing the song, "Hold the fort" we get in a defensive position when we should be on the offensive and destroy the works of the enemy. No more intimidation or fear of the enemy because of a greater realization of the Holy Spirit within us. Let's wake up as an army of believers and take our place in Christ and act like the Bible is true and do exploits in the Name of Jesus.

Therefore, there is no place or excuse for the believer to whine, cry, slobber and throw a pity party. Consider Paul and Silas in the Philippian jail. After they had cast the demon out of the slave girl, her owners had Paul and Silas thrown in jail- Acts 16:19-21.

Acts 16:22-26

The crowd joined in the attack against Paul and Silas, and the magistrates ordered them to be stripped and beaten. After they had been severely flogged, they were thrown into prison, and the jailer was commanded to guard them carefully. Upon receiving such orders, he put them in the inner cell and fastened their feet in the stocks. About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them. Suddenly there was such a violent earthquake that the foundations of the prison were shaken. At once all the prison doors flew open, and everybody's chains came loose.

However, Paul and Silas in their darkest hour lifted up praise and worship to God. That is when their deliverance came; suppose they had thrown a pity party instead, probably would have had a different outcome. Sure one may say, "Easier said than done!" My response is, "What are our alternatives then?" Do we resign ourselves to suffer under the oppression of the enemy, wallowing in self-pity. That position does not help but hinder our deliverance from coming. It may provide some temporary relief for our flesh to feel sorry for ourselves, but in reality, it only makes our situation worse. I am not making this up, this is God's will for us according to Scripture:

Philippians 4:4-7

Rejoice in the Lord always. I will say it again: Rejoice! Let your gentleness be evident to all. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18

Be joyful always; pray continually; give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus.

This is really important, to have a victor's attitude, because in Jesus we are more than conquerors. Without this disposition, using the Name of Jesus becomes an apologetic enterprise with no power. That is why the Bible says to rejoice in the Lord always, in everything give thanks, in the midst of trials, tests and temptations, count it all joy. The Bible calls us victors, more than conquerors, let's start acting like it. The problem is folks will say, "Well I just don't feel like more than a conqueror" That is what defeats them, living in the sense realm- we walk by faith not by sight. If we pull the devil into the realm of faith in God's Word we will beat him every time. If we allow him to get our eyes on the circumstances like Peter, looking at the waves while he walked on water, we will sink like he did. But if we call out, Lord save me, Jesus is always faithful to pull us out of the mess we get ourselves in when we are faithless. Don't be offended if He says, "Oh you of little faith why did you doubt Me!"

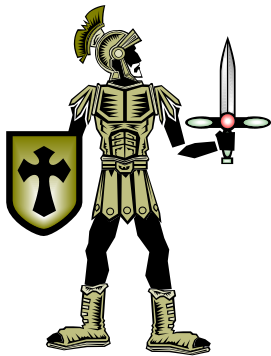
Side Tip: Physical exercise is of some value, right? The flesh is inherently lazy, so physical exercise is a tool to help our spirit bring our body under subject which has great spiritual implications. We will have more energy to pray, study and do God's Work. It will also provide stamina to minister under the anointing so we don't fall out and become weary in well doing. Ministering under the anointing takes a toll on our body, so being physically fit will serve us well to be able to minister for a longer period of time before needing a break. 1 Timothy 4:8, "*For physical training is of some value, but godliness has value for all things, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come.*"

The problem with some Christians is in their wrong thinking. They have been led to believe that Jesus has all the authority in heaven and in earth and is sovereign and can do whatever He wants to do. Therefore, it's up to Him to deal with the devil, sickness and disease because He has the authority.

Sadly, so many Christians have been religiously brainwashed into thinking, "Well God is sovereign, if He wants to do something about the problems in life that we face He will do it. If He doesn't change things, it must be because He wants to teach us something, because He has the authority and the power, just leave it up to God. When sickness or depression comes, just accept it because God is allowing it to work something out in our life." The reality is that the devil has already defeated these believers through lies, deception and religious traditions of men- bondage!

The truth is that it's not up to God, but up to us on this earth to deal with the devil and face his trials, tests and temptations head on with a more than a conqueror attitude. If anything is going to be done with the devil, we have to do it by using the Name of Jesus. God is not going to lift a finger in regards to the devil, since He already has paralyzed him 2,000 years through the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus. Now it's up to us to enforce Satan's defeat Jesus won for us. Bottom line, if we don't do anything about the devil (bind and loose) then nothing will be done. If we allow him to run rampant in our lives, God will allow it as well, it's up to us. So many believers are waiting on God to do something about the devil, when God is waiting on us to resist the devil and put him on the run in Jesus name!

4. Our Place of Authority in Combat



Does the Church have authority that she has not recognized- yes, we have not even gotten into the edge of it. However, by the time Jesus returns there will be a host of believers who will rise up and walk in this authority God has given us. Jesus defeated death, so we have authority to rebuke death, since it is the same as rebuking the devil. Like the Policemen. He does not pray that the traffic will stop, he uses his authority and commands it to stop. Nowhere in the New Testament do we ever see Jesus or the apostles pray to God about the devil, they rebuked the devil and he obeyed.

Hebrews 2:14-15

Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death — that is, the devil— and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.

We as the Church have been given the authority that Jesus had obtained through conquest. His intent is that we exercise it on the earth today. Yet, most Christians have not realized this yet and have barely grasped the implications of the Name of Jesus. God has exalted us to His own right hand in Jesus according to Ephesians 2:1-7. Too often Christians are bound up in defeat and held captive by fear. We are above sickness, disease and all evil. Jesus is head to the Church over all things- for the Church's benefit. The devil will fight us in this area of the authority of the believer more than any other area, but if we will persist in stubborn faith, the victory will be ours!

Beware of Open Doors to the Enemy

It is important not to give the devil any place in us, any foothold or exploit any weaknesses. The good news is the devil cannot take any place unless we give it to him. He can't just gain access to our lives and homes whenever he wants, he must be invited. It's up to us whether the devil has any place in our life. There is nothing Jesus can do if we give the devil permission in our lives, because we have the authority. Jesus has already defeated the devil and did what we could not do. Until that Angel in Revelation 20:3 comes to bind the devil for 1,000 years, nothing is going to be done to him by God unless we do it. Feed on these truths and get them in your spirit so you can act on them in faith. When we get into the area of sin, disobedience, fear, doubt and unbelief without repenting, we leave the door open for the enemy to come on in.

Ephesians 4:26-27

“In your anger do not sin”: Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold.

The Scriptures have a lot to say about staying sharp, alert and keep our flesh under control so we don't get taken advantage of by the enemy.

Mark 13:33- Be on guard! Be alert.

Ephesians 6:18- With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

1 Peter 5:8- Be self-controlled and alert.

1 Thessalonians 5:6

So then, let us not be like others, who are asleep, but let us be alert and self-controlled.

James 5:8- You too, be patient and stand firm, because the Lord's coming is near.

1 Peter 4:7

The end of all things is near. Therefore be clear minded and self-controlled so that you can pray.

We have authority in our Lives and Home.

Ephesians 6:12-13

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.

Authority in your own lives, but what about in the lives of others?

Evil spirits are rebel holders of authority, dethroned by Christ. Adam, who was the god over this world had committed high treason, and sold us out to the devil, who became the god of this world instead. Adam had the legal right to do this, but not the moral right. Thank God, Jesus came and dethroned the devil, for Jesus is called the last Adam in 1 Corinthians 15:45. He became our substitute, we have authority over the devil and we can dominate him now, but not over human wills; crazy enough, they may want the devil in their life. But when it comes to my life, I can make him leave me alone and my household. So remember, it's a different dynamic when dealing with other people outside our house, their wills are involved! Deuteronomy 30:19, *“This day I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. Now choose life, so that you and your children may live...”*

We can't exercise authority over human wills; God doesn't Himself. So if God does not exercise authority over human wills, neither can we. Nor can we exercise authority over evil spirits in other people unless they want to be helped. Some folks want it just the way it is and it will stay that way because they like it like that- yes they are deceived. We can address the power of deception over their lives and claim their deliverance and salvation. Remember, until they want a change in their life it's going to stay the way it is.

2 Corinthians 4:3-4

And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing. The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

We can't go down the street and cast the devil out of everyone we meet cause they may not want the devil out of their lives. We as individuals in our own lives and home, have authority to exercise it there. We don't have authority over the devil in the lives of other people or our fellow church members unless they give us their permission. Nor do we have authority over the devil out in this world because he has a right to be out there. He is the god of this world until Adam's lease runs out, because he took up Adam's lease in the Garden of Eden. When that lease runs out, that will be the end of him in the earth. However, he can't dominate us even though he has a right to be here, because Jesus defeated him for us and for sinners if they would know it and accept it for themselves. We as believers have no authority to march down to the "Red Light" district of our cities and tell those proprietors of ungodliness they have to leave. Nor can we converge on every abortion clinic in town and lock their doors. However, we can get so many people saved in those areas through revival that they run out of business and close down. We can also bind the demonic powers behind these evil industries to cease and desist from their maneuvers and operations in those areas. We can reclaim bad parts of town for God's glory through the Word of God and prayer in the Name of Jesus. The Biblical method for social reform is the New Birth. When folks gets saved, they don't want to sin anymore- this deals with the root of the problem!

Acts 19:18-20

Many of those who believed now came and openly confessed their evil deeds. A number who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas. In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power.

Eternal Life in Jesus

According to the promise of Life, there is no life outside of Jesus Christ. Christianity is not a religion, it is the life of God imparted unto the spirit of man- eternal life! The Life is in the Son, he who has the Son has life- ZOE (Greek word for Eternal Life) which is the God kind of life. His words are spirit and life (John 6:63), through the new birth we receive the life and nature of God and are born into God's family as children of God- partakers of the divine nature. When we stay with the Word, we stay in the Life of God!

1 John 5:11-12

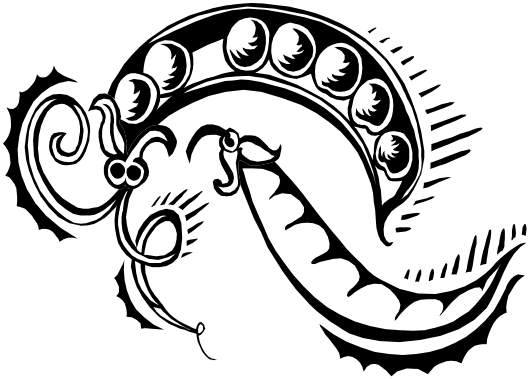
And this is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life.

Having a revelation of eternal life is essential to operating in the authority of the believer. Knowing it and walking in it will cause us to prevail in every area of life. It also causes the light and revelation of God's Word to come forth and set the believer on the ascendancy.

The Greater one Inside us

The greater one lives inside us, so we have nothing to fear- 1 John 4:4. God in us makes us a master in this world. God is bigger than the devil, storms, tests trials or any force that comes against us- we need to learn to lean on the Holy Spirit. Romans 5:17 states that we reign in life as kings through Jesus. It's not about experiences, feelings or natural things, but the reality of faith in God's Word. The Greater One came and made His home in us. The Holy Spirit comes and lives in us forever- John 14:16. Our body is the temple of the Holy Spirit. As Christians we don't need to try and get a hold of God, the Holy Spirit already lives inside us and Jesus said He would be with us always- Matthew 28:20, "*And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.*"

We have been saying that according to Luke 10:19 we have authority over all the power of the enemy. When we believe this truth in our hearts, we will act like it is true in our life. We will have a spring in our step, our countenance will light up because the Word works- just act like the Bible is true, the greater one is inside us. The eyes of a human are the windows to their soul. When dealing with demonized folks, try to look at them in the eyes and you will find, they will not look at you or give you eye contact. Every Christian is a master of the devil! God comes to dwell in us for a reason, to be a master over all the powers of darkness and exercise dominion. We are God's representatives in this earth, the Holy Spirit wants to be as powerful in us, the Body of Christ as He was in Jesus 2,000 years ago- doing greater works by working through millions of believers through the world!



I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds.

John 12:24

This may sound like a fairy tale because for so long we have been taught a psychology of doubt and unbelief of what we are not and cannot do and how weak and unworthy we are- "Just an ole sinner saved by grace, so don't expect much in this life." True, I was a sinner, but now I'm a child of God by grace through faith. These well meaning Christians think if they just pray long enough, fast long enough, do some kind of penance and cry and beg God into the notion that maybe if He feels like it, He might just consider their plea for help and give them just a thimble full of power. That kind of thinking, my brother and sister is what the Bible calls doctrines of demons. The enemy has deceived the Church in this area. He gave us a spirit of Power, Love and a Sound Mind! The Bible has so much to say about the Power we already have. If we were to give an altar call for Spirit filled believers to come forward to receive the power of God in their lives, 99% of them will come forward for what they already have. Fear of the devil for the Christian is just plain nonsense! God has not given us a spirit of fear!

2 Timothy 1:7 AMP

For God did not give us a spirit of timidity (of cowardice, of craven and cringing and fawning fear), but [He has given us a spirit] of power and of love and of calm and well-balanced mind and discipline and self-control.

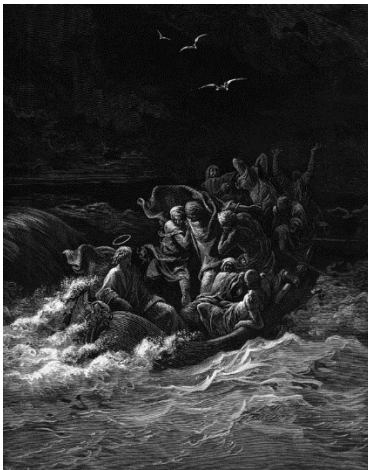
Training in godliness is key to growing in the things of God in this life and the life to come. We need to cash in on the promises of God and enjoy His provision for all things that pertain to life and godliness. God never gives anyone fear or a message of fear. On the contrary, the Bible has over 100 references of phrases like, “Fear not” or “Don’t be afraid” and the like. So let’s change our vocabulary to not speak these kinds of words in our lives. Fear gives place to the devil if we yield to it. Actually fear is a temptation and is sin when yielded to.

1 John 4:18

There is no fear in love. But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love.

Jesus Exercises Authority over the elements

There is authority in the Name of Jesus, even over the laws of nature, consider the storm that Jesus rebuked. Anything that comes to kill, steal and destroy we have authority to speak the Name and it will stop dead in its tracks. That’s all we have to do is speak the Word only and sickness, disease and the devil will obey us. Like the policeman, we have been endowed through the power of attorney, authority to enforce Satan’s defeat, to go about doing good and destroying the works of the devil. With weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left- 2 Corinthians 6:7.



One day Jesus said to his disciples, “Let’s go over to the other side of the lake.” So they got into a boat and set out. As they sailed, he fell asleep. A squall came down on the lake, so that the boat was being swamped, and they were in great danger. The disciples went and woke him, saying, “Master, Master, we’re going to drown!” He got up and rebuked the wind and the raging waters; the storm subsided, and all was calm. “Where is your faith?” he asked his disciples. In fear and amazement they asked one another, “Who is this? **He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey him.”**

Luke 8:22-25

When Jesus was crossing the Sea of Galilee, I believe the devil caused a storm to come upon the lake in an attempt to drown Jesus and end the whole thing right then and there. In Job chapter 1 we see that Satan was the cause of Job’s calamities, one of them being a great wind that destroyed the house where his children were feasting and killed them all in Job 1:18-19. Instead of calling tornados and hurricanes an act of God, the responsibility for the perversions of nature would be the handiwork of Satan, not God. In the Garden of Eden, before the fall, I do not see Adam building a storm shelter to protect himself and Eve from tornadoes. These aberrations of nature came upon the earth as a result of sin, and sin is what gives the devil the right to afflict the world with famine, wars and natural disasters in order to kill, steal and destroy humanity (John 10:10). Let’s look at the same account in Mark chapter four:

Mark 4:37-41

A furious squall came up, and the waves broke over the boat, so that it was nearly swamped. Jesus was in the stern, sleeping on a cushion. The disciples woke him and said to him, “Teacher, don’t you care if we drown?” He got up, rebuked the wind and said to the waves, “Quiet! Be still!” Then the wind died down and it was completely calm. He said to his disciples, “Why are you so afraid? Do you still have no faith?**” They were terrified and asked each other, “Who is this? Even the wind and the waves obey him!”**

Notice that Jesus rebuked the wind and raging waters and they obeyed Him. Jesus went on to rebuke them for their lack of faith. He made an astonishing statement, “Why are you so afraid? Do you still have no faith?” Fear is the opposite of faith. Actually fear is faith in the devil and what he is going to do; an expectation or dread of bad things happening. As faith comes by hearing the words of God, fear comes by hearing the words of the devil. If Jesus had not intervened with faith, the fear of the disciples would have enabled the devil to sink that boat. Romans 14:23- “...*everything that does not come from faith is sin.*” You may be thinking, “So brother are you asserting that I have authority over the weather?” According to the words of Jesus, I have to say yes! The fact Jesus rebuked the disciples was on account that they did not handle the situation themselves and address the storm.

John 14:12 AMP

I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, if anyone steadfastly believes in Me, he will himself be able to do the things that I do; and he will do even greater things than these, because I go to the Father.

I don't think it is coincidental that after the storm, as soon as Jesus and His disciples arrive at the shore, they were met by a demon possessed man. I believe there was a direct connection between the storm trying to keep Jesus from coming ashore and casting the demons out of this man.

Luke 8:26-29

They sailed to the region of the Gerasenes, which is across the lake from Galilee. When Jesus stepped ashore, he was met by a demon-possessed man from the town. For a long time this man had not worn clothes or lived in a house, but had lived in the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out and fell at his feet, shouting at the top of his voice, “What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg you, don't torture me!” For Jesus had commanded the evil spirit to come out of the man. Many times it had seized him, and though he was chained hand and foot and kept under guard, he had broken his chains and had been driven by the demon into solitary places.

Strategically, Satan would rather have people die young of natural disasters, sickness, disease, war etc. in order to keep them from hearing the gospel and get saved. A premature death of unbelievers ensures Satan that these poor souls will go to hell. God on the other hand wants them to stay alive as long as possible so they can hear the gospel as many times as possible in order for them to be saved.

Matthew 5:45

He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.

1 Timothy 2:3-5

This is good, and pleases God our Savior, who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.

2 Peter 3:9

The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.

James 1:13-15

When tempted, no one should say, “God is tempting me.” For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death.

Jesus has come and has set the record straight as to who is the source, author and giver of good and evil. I have already mentioned the simple theology of Good God and Bad Devil, it's worth repeating. For the Christian, if it's good, it's from God so accept it, if it's bad, meaning out to kill, steal and destroy your life than it's bad, resist it in Jesus Name! For example, does cancer kill, steal and destroy people's lives? Than it is not from our Heavenly Father, but from the devil. No it's not God trying to keep us humble or teach us some deep esoteric spiritual truth. It's simply Satan trying to take us out of this earth so we can't do any more damage to his kingdom as a Christian. For something that the Bible teaches so simply, it's amazing how the devil has confused Christians on this matter!

John 10:10 AMP

The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).

Notice that James, by the Holy Spirit had to address this Satanic lie that God is the author of trials, tests and temptations- just look at the context of verses 1-15. *"Don't be deceived, my dear brothers."* Deceived about what James? Deceived into thinking that God brings trials, tests and temptations into our life, that God is the author of it or approves of what the devil is doing to kill, steal and destroy us.

James 1:16-17

Don't be deceived, my dear brothers. Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

The Bible tells us not to be ignorant of Satan's devices, and one of them is to put the blame on God for every bad thing that happens. Actually Satan would love for folks to believe that he does not exist. This would give him carte blanche to run rampant creating misery wherever he goes with anonymity. No one would think to stand up against him and stop him if he does not exist. The other extreme would be for the devil to get us to believe that he is behind everything, become so demon conscious that God becomes small and the devil becomes huge in our mind. No the Bible teaches a balance in the middle. Yes the devil exists, he is the god of this world and the responsible party for bad things that happen in this world. However, Jesus had defeated him 2,000 years ago and placed him under our feet for us to rule and dominate the devil, sin, sickness and all the kingdom of darkness.

2 Corinthians 2:11

In order that Satan might not outwit us. For we are not unaware of his schemes.

2 Corinthians 2:11 AMP

To keep Satan from getting the advantage over us; for we are not ignorant of his wiles and intentions.

When we look at the New Covenant Church, Paul by the Holy Spirit reveals that our battle is not with flesh and blood:

Ephesians 6:10-13

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.

Nor are the weapons of our warfare of this earth, they are supernatural!

Ephesians 6:13-18

Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

2 Corinthians 6:7- “With weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left.”

Colossians 4:12-13

Epaphras, who is one of you and a servant of Christ Jesus, sends greetings. He is always wrestling in prayer for you, that you may stand firm in all the will of God, mature and fully assured.

What are these mighty weapons you may ask?

1. The Word of God
2. The Name of Jesus
3. The Prayer of Faith
4. The anointing and presence of the Holy Spirit- Destroys the yoke of bondage
5. Praise and worship
6. Walking in Love- overcome evil with good
7. Even joy and laughter

To whom do we engage in said warfare, surely not with God. We are not trying to twist God’s arm into taking care of us; not when He has given us all things that pertain to life and godliness according to 2 Peter 1:2-4. God is certainly not the one trying to hold us back from entering into His perfect will for our lives and enjoy our glorious inheritance on this earth. Since there are no battles in heaven, but rather here on this earth, our Promise Land for believers is here and now- taking hold of the promises of God for our lives and advancing the Kingdom of God on the earth. Consider the blessed, inspiring promise that greeted Israel as they faced the Promise Land.

Deuteronomy 11:22-25

If you carefully observe all these commands I am giving you to follow — to love the Lord your God, to walk in all his ways and to hold fast to him - then the Lord will drive out all these nations before you, and you will dispossess nations larger and stronger than you. **Every place where you set your foot will be yours: Your territory will extend from the desert to Lebanon, and from the Euphrates River to the western sea. **No man will be able to stand against you.** The Lord your God, as he promised you, will put the terror and fear of you on the whole land, wherever you go.**

Foot-prints meant possession, but it must be their own foot-prints. God would back them up in the battles that were fought. Our Jesus gives us the same incentive for conquest today, don’t find yourself in the desert as they did because of unbelief. Every promise in the Bible that we put our feet upon is ours.

The rich plain of healing is ours if we will simply put our foot there and claim it. The upland of spiritual power is ours, though the devil is there to try and deny our passage; it is ours if we will but go against him and drive him out of his strongholds through the might of the Name of Jesus and the Word of God. Let's not compromise, but defeat every enemy, leave none left in the Promise Land of God's inheritance for our lives. The size of our inheritance depends upon how much land we choose to take for our life. It comes down to where we have trodden under our spiritual feet of faith, really stood on and walked over- how much of God do we really want? Every child of God has to make that choice for themselves- go for all of it my brother and sister! We can claim and enjoy as many promises as we want, they already belong to us, bought and paid for by Jesus- we can't let religious traditions rob us of the truth. Don't take no for an answer, if we will only persevere, every enemy can be defeated, every spoil and treasure can be captured and enjoyed!

Satan knows that when we come in agreement with God's Word, God cannot allow us to fail without seeing Himself fail, and this He will not allow. Then with a knowledge of our privileges as children of God, and a will to have them for ourselves and others, coupled with a persistent spirit that will not admit defeat, we can cast into the sea any mountain that stands before us. Go in this might and God will get the glory, as we get the victory in Jesus Name!

2 Corinthians 1:18-22

But as surely as God is faithful, our message to you is not "Yes" and "No." For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by me and Silas and Timothy, was not "Yes" and "No," but in him it has always been "Yes." For no matter how many promises God has made, they are "Yes" in Christ. And so through him the "Amen" is spoken by us to the glory of God. Now it is God who makes both us and you stand firm in Christ. He anointed us, set his seal of ownership on us, and put his Spirit in our hearts as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

The Bible tells us that this fight is a fight of faith, standing on and believing in God's Word in spite of what the devil tries to throw at us- this is a fight that we win when we stand on the Word. Just as Jesus defeated the devil in Luke 4 by speaking the Word of God.

1 Timothy 1:18-19

Timothy, my son, I give you this instruction in keeping with the prophecies once made about you, so that by following them you may fight the good fight, holding on to faith and a good conscience. Some have rejected these and so have shipwrecked their faith.

1 Timothy 6:12

Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of the eternal life to which you were called when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

Consider this, prayer does not change God, because God does not change; rather prayer changes us and the circumstances that are arraigned against us. When Jesus was talking about the mountain in Mark 11:23-24 and the mulberry tree in Luke 17:6, He was talking about obstacles, roadblocks and hindrances that stand in our way- kind of sounds like some of those would certainly be demonic in origin doesn't it?

Well what is our response suppose to be, “Oh God please move these problem areas out of my life; it’s not fair every time I want to serve you something gets in my way!” Spoken in a whining tone. Jesus never said for us to ask God to do anything about it, but told us to speak to those problem areas and tell them where to go and they would obey us, not God, but us! Makes sense in light of being authorized by God to use the Name of Jesus.

Mountains in this life are obstacles of the enemy, in a defiant attempt to deny us of God’s will, His Word from coming to pass in our lives. At this juncture, we know we are in His will for God’s Word is God’s will. Faith begins where the will of God is known. So as we face off with the mountains in our lives, a mountain of bad habits, financial debt or a terminal disease; His will becomes our will, His command, our command.

1 John 5:14-15

This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. And if we know that he hears us — whatever we ask — we know that we have what we asked of him.

We would say, “In the Name of Jesus I command you to go!” That is as though Jesus were saying it, and when He says it, that makes the Father say it. Standing in back of us is the union of the Trinity and the power of the Universe. God’s will and our will are allied against the enemy. Through us, God is able to fight His enemies in this world, He acts through us. Through us, He uses His power. As we hurl that matchless Name of His Son against the hosts of hell, they will fly away in confusion. God has authorized us to use the Name of Jesus against the enemies of God, which are the same enemies that come against us. Let’s use the Name, the Power and Majesty that is in the Name of Jesus and make those Mountains a plain to walk over. When we use the Name, this brings God on the scene, so our opponents have to fight against God- the battle is His. It is His honor now, that is challenged. When God fights, our enemies tremble, and fall to rise no more.

Romans 8:31-39

What, then, shall we say in response to this? If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all — how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things? Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God who justifies. Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died — more than that, who was raised to life — is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us. Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall trouble or hardship or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword? As it is written:

**“For your sake we face death all day long;
we are considered as sheep to be slaughtered.”**

No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him who loved us. For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Romans 16:20

The God of peace will soon crush Satan under your feet. The grace of our Lord Jesus be with you.

Revelation 3:9

I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews though they are not, but are liars — I will make them come and fall down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you.

When one uses the Name according to the Word of God, Jesus backs His Name with all the power of God. There is just no force, might, or authority in earth, air or in hell that can prevent the answer- it simply must come to pass according to Mark 11:22-24; Luke 17:6. We may think our mountain is large, and the sea is at a great distance, and our own faith small. Well, all this may be true, but our confidence is in that Name above all names. Jesus said the secret is not more faith, but to use our faith as a seed by speaking to the problems in life in Jesus' Name. Once we know the secret, what a difference the Christian life becomes. Understanding how to drive a car will take us places, sure beats walking! I may not know how a turbo charger works, but I know when I press my foot on the accelerator the car moves. I just need to know the basics of speaking the Name of Jesus, the rest is bonus information. It is not the quantity of faith, but the place where it is aimed. If we speak in that Name, we are a victor from that hour on whether it concerns money, health or souls we cannot fail- it has nothing to do with our feelings! The Mighty Name that heads up all the power of the Universe says so, and it must be so- God is not a liar.

1 Samuel 17:45-48

David said to the Philistine, “You come against me with sword and spear and javelin, but I come against you **in the name of the Lord Almighty, the God of the armies of Israel, whom you have defied. This day the Lord will hand you over to me, and I'll strike you down and cut off your head. Today I will give the carcasses of the Philistine army to the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and the whole world will know that there is a God in Israel. All those gathered here will know that it is not by sword or spear that the Lord saves; for the battle is the Lord's, and he will give all of you into our hands.” As the Philistine moved closer to attack him, David ran quickly toward the battle line to meet him.**

Exodus 14:13-14

Moses answered the people, “Do not be afraid. Stand firm and you will see the deliverance the Lord will bring you today. The Egyptians you see today you will never see again. The Lord will fight for you; **you need only to be still.”**

Psalms 37:7-20

Be still before the Lord and wait patiently for him; do not fret when men succeed in their ways, when they carry out their wicked schemes. Refrain from anger and turn from wrath; **do not fret — it leads only to evil. For evil men will be cut off, but those who hope in the Lord will inherit the land. A little while, and the wicked will be no more; though you look for them, they will not be found. But the meek will inherit the land and enjoy great peace. The wicked plot against the righteous and gnash their teeth at them; **but the Lord laughs at the wicked, for he knows their day is coming.** The wicked draw the sword and bend the bow to bring down the poor and needy, to slay those whose ways are upright. But their swords will pierce their own hearts, and their bows will be broken. Better the little that the righteous have than the wealth of many wicked; for the power of the wicked will be broken, but the Lord upholds the righteous. The days of the blameless are known to the Lord, and their inheritance will endure forever. **In times of disaster they will not wither; in days of famine they will enjoy plenty.** But the wicked will perish: The Lord's enemies will be like the beauty of the fields, they will vanish — vanish like smoke.**

Our enemy may be stubborn and resist us, but our will is set, we have already won in Jesus. So let's charge at the enemy in that all-conquering Name. The enemy may stand for a time, but he must yield; it takes a strong will, perseverance and persistence to hold us quiet in some places, but God can and will strengthen our resolve to stand, for a delay to an answer does not mean denial!

Hebrews 10:35-36

So do not throw away your confidence; it will be richly rewarded. You need to persevere so that when you have done the will of God, you will receive what he has promised.

Hebrews 6:12

We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.

Galatians 6:9

Let us not become weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up.

The battle comes down to us making the choice to stand on God's Word, no matter what. If we are going to just try the Name of Jesus and give it a whirl, please don't bother, it won't work because the devil will know and just wait for us to give up. With stubborn persistence, let's push our way up through every obstacle the enemy may place in our way. Yea it's tough, hard and difficult but this is where the crucible of character is formed for God's glory and our eventual joy and victory!

Hebrews 10:38-39

"But my righteous one will live by faith. And if he shrinks back, I will not be pleased with him." But we are not of those who shrink back and are destroyed, but of those who believe and are saved.

2 Timothy 2:10-13

Therefore I endure everything for the sake of the elect, that they too may obtain the salvation that is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. Here is a trustworthy saying:

**If we died with him,
we will also live with him;
if we endure,
we will also reign with him.
If we disown him,
he will also disown us;
if we are faithless,
he will remain faithful,
for he cannot disown himself.**

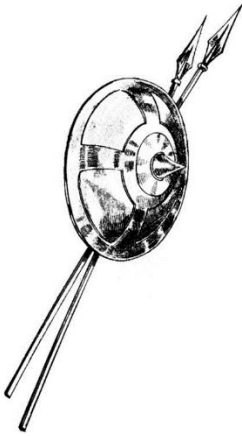
The above scripture has encouraged me through many a tough place and will work for you too if you will embrace and stand on them in the face of conflict, trials, tests and temptations. Does that mean I won every battle, no by no means, but I refuse to give up and be called a failure. God is faithful to brush us off and forgive us for every defeat- just don't disown Him and abandon the faith! If we have taken hold of the plow, we must hold on until the field is finished. Look up at that mountain, be bold as a lion (Proverbs 28:1); like David run to the battle line. Our confidence is in the Lord, that is why we are very bold, the greater One lives on the inside of us! This is not arrogance or self-sufficiency; no we are strong in the Lord and in the Power of His Might! We can do all things through Christ who strengthens us!

2 Corinthians 3:7-12

Now if the ministry that brought death, which was engraved in letters on stone, came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, fading though it was, will not the ministry of the Spirit be even more glorious? If the ministry that condemns men is glorious, how much more glorious is the ministry that brings righteousness! For what was glorious has no glory now in comparison with the surpassing glory. And if what was fading away came with glory, how much greater is the glory of that which lasts! **Therefore, since we have such a hope, we are very bold.**

Luke 9:59-62

Jesus said to another man, "Follow me." But the man replied, "Lord, first let me go and bury my father." Jesus said to him, "Let the dead bury their own dead, but you go and proclaim the kingdom of God." Still another said, "I will follow you, Lord; but first let me go back and say good-bye to my family." Jesus replied, "No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for service in the kingdom of God."



The devil is not going to roll over and concede to us in making inroads against his world system with the gospel. He does not appreciate us robbing him of souls, and binding his minions from doing their dirty work. He is going to set his will against ours and stir up trouble in order to make life difficult in the hope that we will give up and say it's not worth it and quit, or at least pull it down a few notches. He will **try** to rain on our parades, steal our peace and joy, attack our body with symptoms, manufacture financial troubles- get the idea! He will even try and get our kids to act rebellious or our spouse to get into selfishness. He will try to exploit any and every weakness, probe for any openings in order to take the steam out of our engine. That is exactly what the devil was doing to Paul in 2 Corinthians 12:7-8- persecution. Satan had detached a demon to follow Paul wherever he went in order to stir up trouble for him.

2 Thessalonians 2:7- *"For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work."*

Today, there are certain types of people who are always trying and never seem to get settled in their walk with God. They are always standing up for prayers, but never seemed to get any farther. Still there are others who really seem to get the light of God's Word, but are held back by some unseen power. The antidote for these folks is to break the power of the devil over their lives, command the enemy to cease and desist from his maneuvers and operations in their lives in Jesus' Name- this can be done for unbelievers too.

We can say, "In the Name of Jesus, I command the power of (Alcoholism, drugs, pornography- just name it) to be broken over this life" and of course we can pray this over ourselves as well. Instantly they will be delivered, and since there is no distance in the spirit, we do not have to be in their presence. Of course remember, they have to want to be free before they can receive it!

Demonic strongholds keep folks from accepting Jesus as their Lord and Savior. They are hungry for God and want deliverance from sin; they crave eternal life, but they are unable, many of them to break loose from the bonds that are holding them- "I cannot become a Christian. I want to, but something holds me back." Our response should be to speak over them, "In the Name of Jesus, I command the power that holds you, broken NOW in Jesus' Name!"

2 Corinthians 4:4

The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

Even born-again, spirit-filled believers can find themselves in all sorts of bondages that were either carried over from their past or got involved with in the present. This even includes folks, who are unable to testify or lead in prayer or freely praise God with their lips, who feel their mouths closed while their hearts cried out for liberty.

There is scarcely a case, for whom a prayer in the Mighty Name of Jesus has not broken the power of the enemy over a person's life, having received in most cases immediate deliverance.

Hebrews 12:1-3

Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses, let us throw off everything that hinders and the sin that so easily entangles, and let us run with perseverance the race marked out for us. Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Sickness, disease, poverty, oppression of all kinds, every name that can be named must all bow to the Name of Jesus in obedience and compliance! I cannot conceive how successful work can be done today, or how believers can be in a place of continual victory, unless they know that the source of their danger is found many times in demoniacal power, and that the power to conquer it is in the Name of Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of God.

Three things are necessary in order to pray and take deliverance and victory over demons:

- 1- We must be children of God
- 2- We must not have any unconfessed or unforgiven sin in the heart, for if we do, the demons will laugh at our prayers.
- 3- We must know the power of the Name of Jesus, and know how to use it.

Read the book of Acts carefully, and notice how the early church used the Name. If our own life has been defeated and hemmed in by the power of the devil, rise up in that Almighty Name of Jesus. Hurl back the Enemy, let's take our deliverance and go, set others free.

Unit 8 Review:

Why would ministering healing to the sick be considered spiritual warfare?

What is the secret to releasing authority?

Is it the Lord's responsibility to do something about the devil?

Why is it so important to have a victor's mentality?

Does prayer change God?

What would be an effective way to pray for someone bound by drugs who wants to be free?

5. Another look at the Trichotomy of Man

Man is a three-fold being known as a Trichotomy- spirit, soul and body. I am a spirit being, I have a soul and I live in a body. Man's development should encompass all three dimensions. To train only the physical is to make an athlete. To train only the mental is to make an intellectual academic. To train only the spiritual is to make a fanatic. God's plan is for the development and training of the whole man. The first priority being of the spirit, than the soul and finally the body.

1 Timothy 4:8

For physical training is of some value, but godliness has value for all things, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come.

1 Corinthians 9:24-27

Do you not know that in a race all the runners run, but only one gets the prize? Run in such a way as to get the prize. Everyone who competes in the games goes into strict training. They do it to get a crown that will not last; but we do it to get a crown that will last forever. Therefore I do not run like a man running aimlessly; I do not fight like a man beating the air. No, I beat my body and make it my slave so that after I have preached to others, I myself will not be disqualified for the prize.

- Conscience is the voice of the spirit and with our spirit we contact God
- Reason is the voice of the soul and with our soul we contact the intellectual realm
- Feelings are the voice of the body and with our feelings we contact the physical realm

We have three kinds of folks today:

- First: those in whom the physical dominate. These are governed by their passions, appetites and physical desires- the addicts and abusers of their bodies.
- Second: those in whom the mind dominates. Here we have the great financial, educational, social and political leaders. A purely intellectual development makes a man a dangerous asset to society. It develops his ego, arrogance and pride with a selfish ambition to dominate others with his/her newly acquired intelligence.
- Third: those in whom the spirit dominates. These are the great spiritual leaders of the Church today- men and women of humility and love, with a servant's heart to elevate others to God. Seeking to restore fallen mankind back to God, to walk in the Spirit and glorify God.

For man to be educated mentally is to be one-third educated; to be educated physically and mentally is to be two-thirds educated. However, to be educated and trained spiritually, mentally and physically, is God's design for a balanced and whole individual and is the essence of development and maturity. Humanity is divided between those whose minds rule the body and spirit, and those whose bodies rule the mind and spirit.

A few generations ago, society taught a boy and girl about self-discipline and restraint; that they had to learn to keep the body under or it would destroy them. Now adults are telling kids to go ahead and explore their passions and see where it takes them, now we have a ton of kids who do not know what gender they are anymore- boys want to be girls and girls want to be boys. Remember, confusion of this sort is of the handiwork of the devil.

Genesis 4:7

“But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.”

What we are calling for is a three-fold development of a man’s spirit, soul and body according to the Word of God. This brings into play a beautiful rhythm in life that is synchronized with God’s plan and dream for His creation to be first in relationship with Him and become masters over the intellectual and natural realms for God’s purposes and glory. Only through a spirit led life can the body be brought under control. A purely intellectual attainment lacks balance, lacks the governing and discipline that the spiritual realm of God can only give.

Galatians 5:16-18

So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want. But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law.

This explains the crime and rebellion that is sweeping over the land. God is being taken out of homes, schools, court rooms, government and so-called higher places of learning- even many churches. So we wonder why is our society decaying, we have been in denial for decades thinking that being progressive means leaving God and traditional values out of our lives.

What we have done is forsaken our own help and opened the door for Satan to come in and wreak havoc in our country. For generations we have been developing the physical and mental at the expense of the spiritual and what do we have to show for it- a feel good, materialistic, me-centered, selfish society that glorifies expedience for commitment, instant gratification for character.

Isaiah 5:20-24

Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter. Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and clever in their own sight. Woe to those who are heroes at drinking wine and champions at mixing drinks, who acquit the guilty for a bribe, but deny justice to the innocent. Therefore, as tongues of fire lick up straw and as dry grass sinks down in the flames, so their roots will decay and their flowers blow away like dust; for they have rejected the law of the Lord Almighty and spurned the word of the Holy One of Israel.

We have seen a breakdown of the family unit, around 50% of children are raised in broken homes. Where is the godly instruction of training children up to love others, respect authority, the values of hard work, faith and honor. Our secular progressive society has normalized homosexuality, we are now considered a freak or homophobic if we insist on the preservation of marriage between a man and a woman- we are called out-of-touch, a fundamentalist and narrow minded.

A woman has a right to murder her own baby when it becomes inconvenient, euthanasia or assisted suicide is becoming socially acceptable as an act of mercy. Watch as illegal drugs will become more accepted as the safeguards of our society are challenged and torn down in the name of self-interest, self-determination, and moral relativism. The lines of morality have become blurred and grayed out in a secular humanistic agenda of self-expression and self-indulgence.

If the Bible is just another book than there is no God, if there is no God than there is no accountability, no standards, no restraint. This is not freedom, but a path to destruction, hurt and misery- it's anarchy and rebellion. This is the work of Satan, to cause total chaos and for folks to give themselves completely over to sensual indulgence at other people's expense. Every man becomes a law unto himself: the gratification of his desires, the carrying out of his plans, the utter ignoring of personal responsibility towards others is a result- everyone begins looking after themselves.

Isaiah 53:6

We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the Lord has laid on him the iniquity of us all.

Proverbs 12:15 NKJV

The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, but he who heeds counsel is wise.

Proverbs 21:2 NKJV

Every way of a man is right in his own eyes, but the Lord weighs the hearts.

Proverbs 29:18- Where there is no revelation, the people cast off restraint.

Philippians 2:19-22

I hope in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you soon, that I also may be cheered when I receive news about you. I have no one else like him, who takes a genuine interest in your welfare. For everyone looks out for his own interests, not those of Jesus Christ.

In case you are thinking this so-called modern trend is new, it's not. Satan keeps recycling his old garbage through the ages with a different wrapper in a different package. He is still peddling the same old thing- rebellion against God. Consider Noah and the flood or Nimrod and the Tower of Babel in Genesis 11:1-9.

We are in the world but not of it. We need to be on guard that the spirit of the world does not creep into our homes and churches.

Genesis 6:5-8

The Lord saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. The Lord was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was filled with pain. So the Lord said, “I will wipe mankind, whom I have created, from the face of the earth — men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air — for I am grieved that I have made them.” But Noah found favor in the eyes of the Lord.

2 Peter 2:4-10

For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment; if he did not spare the ancient world when he brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others; if he condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly; and if he rescued Lot, a righteous man, who was distressed by the filthy lives of lawless men (for that righteous man, living among them day after day, was tormented in his righteous soul by the lawless deeds he saw and heard)— if this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature and despise authority.

All is not lost, even though the Church is becoming the last front in our society where the light of Biblical character and values are being taught and practiced. Even though many churches have become lukewarm, there are still others that have not compromised the message and are walking in the Light of this Word called the Bible. I firmly believe that the reality of a given society is a product of the spiritual institutions that are in place. If our country is in decline, it is because it started with the Church in this nation. The remedy is simple, a renewal and reassertion of the Church in our country and we will see a revival of godliness in the land. It won’t happen overnight any more than we have been in a gradual decline over the decades. It’s not in social activism, but in getting folks born again, one at a time, that is what changes the social landscape of a country.

Proverbs 14:34- Righteousness exalts a nation, but sin is a disgrace to any people.

Revelation 2:4-5

Yet I hold this against you: You have forsaken your first love. Remember the height from which you have fallen! Repent and do the things you did at first. If you do not repent, I will come to you and remove your lamp stand from its place.

Revelation 3:14-22

“These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God’s creation. I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So, because you are lukewarm — neither hot nor cold — I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You say, ‘I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.’ But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. I counsel you to buy from me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see. Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent. Here I am! I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in and eat with him, and he with me. To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

Realize though, this world is not going to get better as the secular humanists espouse; rejecting God at every turn is a well-known and recorded recipe for disaster.

2 Timothy 3:1-5

But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God— having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them.

Job 8:13-15

Such is the destiny of all who forget God; so perishes the hope of the godless. What he trusts in is fragile; what he relies on is a spider's web. He leans on his web, but it gives way; he clings to it, but it does not hold.

Psalms 9:17- The wicked return to the grave, all the nations that forget God.

God has created us in His image, we are spirit beings. He has a divine purpose for our lives that we may commune with Him. It was God's dream that man should have a relationship with his Creator; so God fashioned man with the capability and spiritual constitution to fulfill this dream. Through the fall, man was alienated from God because of sin, which separated mankind and greatly impaired his spiritual faculties. However, through Jesus Christ, reconciliation, righteousness and the new birth has been provided to restore our lost fellowship and the ability to once again commune with our loving Creator. The spiritual potential in man is capable of marvelous developments in God through His Word; yet our educational institutions fail to recognize its possibilities due to the misapplication of "Separation of Church and State."

Genesis 1:26-27

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.

Genesis 2:7

The Lord God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being.

John 4:23-24

"Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks. God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth."

However this is the mission of the Church, to develop the greatest part of man, his spirit- the training and development of our spirit should embrace our greatest priority and highest effort. To neglect this critical area of our being is to sink to a level of instinct like that of an animal. That is exactly what Satan wants, to push evolution in order for humanity to buy into the lie that we are just like animals with a bigger brain. This notion makes the way for people to override their conscience and follow mere natural instincts of the sinful nature and indulge into sin of all kinds. Akin to believing that Satan does not exist, this lie that we are mere animals ensures Satan's domination over their lives.

1 Corinthians 15:32-34

If I fought wild beasts in Ephesus for merely human reasons, what have I gained? If the dead are not raised, “Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.” Do not be misled: “Bad company corrupts good character.”

Ephesians 4:17-19

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, with a continual lust for more.

Jude 8-10

In the very same way, these dreamers pollute their own bodies, reject authority and slander celestial beings. But even the archangel Michael, when he was disputing with the devil about the body of Moses, did not dare to bring a slanderous accusation against him, but said, “The Lord rebuke you!” Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand; and what things they do understand by instinct, like unreasoning animals — these are the very things that destroy them.

Romans 1:18-32

The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities — his eternal power and divine nature — have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.

For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles.

Therefore God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator — who is forever praised. Amen.

Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion.

Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Although they know God’s righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death, they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them.

The only threat the devil has is when people become spiritually born again and walk in the spiritual realm with God. The devil is a spirit being, so only by exercising spiritual authority through our spirit in that dimension can we trample the devil under our feet. As a result, this is what Satan is so afraid of and will do whatever he can to prevent us from ascending back to our restored place of exercising dominion from our spirit. As believers, if we allow the devil to drag us into the mental arena or the arena of our feelings, the physical, he will defeat us every time. However, if we pull him into the realm of faith, the Word of God, the spirit realm, we will defeat him every time. Remember in Luke chapter 4 when Jesus was being tempted by the devil, how did Jesus defeat him, by speaking the Word, "It is written." This fight is a fight of faith, speaking and standing on God's Word against the enemy, it is a fight that we win 100% of the time if we will not turn loose of God's Word, the Bible in our lives and speak the Name of Jesus.

1 Timothy 6:12-13

Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of the eternal life to which you were called when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

2 Corinthians 6:7

With weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left;

Ephesians 6:10-18

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

2 Corinthians 10:3-6

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

The supernatural realm is really the realm of the believer. No one knows how much the mind and spirit can be developed. The key is learning to discipline the body because of the sinful nature that is in it. Submitting our bodies to the Word by the Spirit unleashes unimaginable potential for our spirit. We have been slow to come to a realization that man is spirit and that his spirit is the core of his being, the real us. In a fallen world system, the focus is on the intellect, particularly in our western culture. The spirit of man is utterly ignored. Even though most people do realize they are eternal beings, they confuse their soul with their spirit.

Only through the recreated spirit of a born again child of God, can the mind become renewed and the passions of the body brought under control- that is not religion, but reality. It is sad to see folks with bodies out of control, driven from one lust to another; with the law of diminishing return set in motion. This law is the result of sin, in that it's never satisfied and requires greater stimulation each time in order to reach the same high until their life spirals down to a premature death.

Romans 8:5-14

Those who live according to the sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires; but those who live in accordance with the Spirit have their minds set on what the Spirit desires. The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind controlled by the Spirit is life and peace; the sinful mind is hostile to God. It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so. Those controlled by the sinful nature cannot please God. You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ. But if Christ is in you, your body is dead because of sin, yet your spirit is alive because of righteousness. And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through his Spirit, who lives in you. Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation — but it is not to the sinful nature, to live according to it. For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live, because those who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God.

6. Deliverance Ministry Mechanics

A) Is it the Devil or just Flesh?

Before we discuss this segment, allow me to clarify the term "Flesh" which comes from the King James Version of the Bible. The New International Version translates the Greek Word as "Sinful Nature"

Galatians 5:19 KJV- "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these..."

Galatians 5:19 NIV- "The acts of the sinful nature are obvious..."

The Greek word "Sarx" in this context refers to the sinful human nature (Selfishness) that is resident in our physical bodies that we had inherited from Adam's fall in the Garden of Eden. We were all born with this sinful nature, but we are not held accountable for yielding to it until the age of accountability.

Romans 7:5-6, 9

For when we were controlled by the sinful nature, the sinful passions aroused by the law were at work in our bodies, so that we bore fruit for death. Once I was alive apart from law; but when the commandment came, sin sprang to life and **I died.**

When we had willfully chosen to yield to this sinful nature in our body, we died spiritually; this event is referred to as "Spiritual Death." The "I" in Romans 7:9, like Paul refers to our spirit man receiving the same sinful nature that we were born with in our physical bodies- coming into our spirit. At that moment we were separated from God and took on the nature of Satan- 1 John 3:10, *"This is how we know who the children of God are and who the children of the devil are."*

Ephesians 2:3

All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our sinful nature and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature objects of wrath.

The good news is when we accepted Jesus as our Lord and Savior, we experienced a spiritual new birth; became a new creation. This meant that our old spiritual nature of sin had died, and a brand new spiritual nature took its place; recreated with the Life and Nature of God. This act is called receiving Eternal Life. As a result, we became children of God, with God's nature in us- Galatians 3:26-29.

Romans 6:23

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Galatians 5:22-23

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law.

Remember that we are a three-fold being, "I am a spirit, I have a soul and I live in a body." Well the New Birth made me a New Creation in my spirit, but the nature of my mind and body were not changed. God's job was to change who I was, my job now by His Grace and through my faith in God's Word, is to renew my mind- reprogram my mind like a computer with the Bible. This in turn brings my body under subjection and obedience to the Word and Will of God. This is what the Bible calls "Sanctification" which simply means to become separated unto God for His holy purpose.

Romans 12:2

Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is — his good, pleasing and perfect will.

Galatians 5:24

Those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the sinful nature with its passions and desires.

Spirit- Saved instantaneously at the New Birth- John 3:3; 2 Corinthians 5:17

Soul- Renewed over the course of the rest of my life on earth, progressive salvation- James 1:21

Body- Body remains the same until it is resurrected at the Rapture- 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18

So, when I talk about the "Flesh" I am talking about the old sinful human nature that is still left in the bodies of every Christian alive on the earth today. This means, that believers in Jesus Christ are very capable of committing sin and live just like the world even when they have been born again with the Holy Spirit indwelling them. This is where spiritual maturity becomes so important, but it's not automatic nor is it easy. However, through faithful diligence of meditating and acting upon the Word of God, we can by the Holy Spirit's help offer our bodies unto God as a living sacrifice.

This may sound confusing, and it certainly is to the world when they see followers of Jesus acting just like them. Unfortunately, as Christians we can yield to and walk after the lusts of our sinful human nature that is still in our bodies, called the "Flesh."

Some things that folks attribute to the devil are really nothing more than works of the flesh. It is important to realize that everything that is wrong in life is not directly the work of an evil spirit. When the Bible talks about keeping the flesh under the dominion of the spirit, too many times folks think that only refers to keeping sexual desires under control. Well, it's true we'll have to keep our body under subjection in that area. But right on the other hand, let's look at what else the Bible lists as acts or works of the flesh or the old sinful nature in Galatians chapter 5 beginning with verse 16:

Galatians 5:16-21

So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want. But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law. The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

What many folks call works of the “the devil,” the Bible calls the works of the flesh. In Ephesians 4:25-32, Paul lists some of the traits of the “old man” or the flesh as well as some of the new traits of the new man in Christ. So when it comes to keeping all the evil tendencies or propensities of our flesh in check, it covers a wide range of things. In order for us to be successful Christians and effective in using the Name of Jesus, we must learn how to bring our flesh under the dominion of the recreated spirit.

Ephesians 4:25-32

Therefore each of you must put off falsehood and speak truthfully to his neighbor, for we are all members of one body. “In your anger do not sin”: Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold. He who has been stealing must steal no longer, but must work, doing something useful with his own hands, that he may have something to share with those in need. Do not let any unwholesome talk come out of your mouths, but only what is helpful for building others up according to their needs, that it may benefit those who listen. And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, with whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice. Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

The key to holiness and spiritual maturity is to walk in love!

Romans 13:8-10

Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law. The commandments, “Do not commit adultery,” “Do not murder,” “Do not steal,” “Do not covet,” and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: “Love your neighbor as yourself.” Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.

So back to Ephesians chapter 4, so who is supposed to “put off” the old sinful nature? We are! “You” is the subject of verse 22. God is not going to “put off the old man” for us. We will have to put off the old man with its envy, bitterness, wrath, anger, stealing, and evil speaking. We are not dealing with evil spirits when we put off those evil tendencies; we are just dealing with our flesh. Certainly, at times the demonic can energize our flesh against us, but that is not always the case.

All too often believers try to take the easy way out and call these evil desires of the flesh a “demon” or an “evil spirit.” Have you heard the phrase, “Well you know the devil made me do it.” The devil had nothing to do with us eating that entire coconut cream pie, we saw and we devoured, end of story. Now we have to eat a whole package of roll-aids to deal with that demon of indigestion- just kidding!

Seriously though, we are all guilty of doing this, because we generally don’t want to take responsibility for our actions, blaming disobedience on the devil is much easier. However, the Bible calls these evil desires the “flesh” or the sinful nature of our body; the believer has to do something about it- by grace through faith in God’s Word.

The only way we can put on “the new man” is to renew our minds with the Word of God. Putting off the old man and putting on the new man is part of our “spiritual act of worship” according to Romans 12:1-2. We have to keep those evil desires and attitudes under the dominion of our spirit- the man on the inside and let the new creature in Christ dominate. As we “put on” Christ we’ll be able to walk in the Spirit of God and not in the flesh; otherwise we become easy prey for Satan. If we didn’t have our flesh, the carnal (earthly) nature to deal with, we wouldn’t be human. That does not make it all right, but as long as we are in this body of ours, we will have a sinful human nature to deal with.

1 Corinthians 3:1-4

Brothers, I could not address you as spiritual but as worldly[carnal] — mere infants in Christ. I gave you milk, not solid food, for you were not yet ready for it. Indeed, you are still not ready. You are still worldly. For since there is jealousy and quarreling among you, are you not worldly? Are you not acting like mere men? For when one says, “I follow Paul,” and another, “I follow Apollos,” are you not mere men?

For example, if someone hits you and your flesh isn’t in subjection to your spirit, it will want to retaliate and hit him back. That’s the way the carnal nature acts apart from God. If someone hurts us, our flesh wants to get even and retaliate and hold bitterness and resentment against the person. That’s the old “get-even” nature of the flesh. It’s not a devil or demonic activity. It’s just the sinful human nature of man left unchecked. However, if a Christian continually yields to a certain area of the flesh, a stronghold can build and invite demonic oppression in that area that holds a believer in bondage.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

According to Ephesians 4:26, *“In your anger do not sin: Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry.”* Putting off the old man and putting on the new man is a choice. We can’t say “Well that’s just the Irish in me.” No, that’s just the flesh on display. If we let the flesh dominate us, we can get out of control and do and say things we’ll regret later on- remember it’s a choice. The secret is not just saying “No” to our body at the moment of truth, but to get full of the Word and the Spirit ahead of time when things are calm. In this way we have built ourselves up spiritually in advance, so it’s much easier to keep the body under in the heat of the moment. If we haven’t built up a reservoir of God’s Grace and made deposits in our lives through our devotional times in the Word of God and prayer, when it comes to making a withdrawal to say “No” to temptation, our faith will bounce like a hot check. The result is our spirit becomes overdrawn, due to a depleted, weak, and malnourished spirit man. When we feed our bodies 3 hot meals a day... sometimes more, and our spirit man one cold snack a week, and we wonder why it’s hard to keep the body in check- go figure!

Matthew 26:41

“Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the body is weak.”

James 1:13-15

When tempted, no one should say, “God is tempting me.” For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death.

Some folks think we can get so “sanctified” that we won’t ever have any more problems with the flesh or Satan. But the only way we won’t have problems with them is to pass on and leave this world. The next time we think that this Christian life is getting too hard, consider the Apostle Paul.

2 Corinthians 11:23-30

I have worked much harder, been in prison more frequently, been flogged more severely, and been exposed to death again and again. Five times I received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned, three times I was shipwrecked, I spent a night and a day in the open sea, I have been constantly on the move. I have been in danger from rivers, in danger from bandits, in danger from my own countrymen, in danger from Gentiles; in danger in the city, in danger in the country, in danger at sea; and in danger from false brothers. I have labored and toiled and have often gone without sleep; I have known hunger and thirst and have often gone without food; I have been cold and naked. Besides everything else, I face daily the pressure of my concern for all the churches. **Who is weak, and I do not feel weak? Who is led into sin, and I do not inwardly burn? If I must boast, I will boast of the things that show my weakness.**

I find the above highlighted passage amazing coming from a man that wrote 2/3 of the New Testament by the Holy Spirit. If Paul still had to keep His body under, what about us!

1 Corinthians 9:24-27

Do you not know that in a race all the runners run, but only one gets the prize? Run in such a way as to get the prize. Everyone who competes in the games goes into strict training. They do it to get a crown that will not last; but we do it to get a crown that will last forever. Therefore I do not run like a man running aimlessly; I do not fight like a man beating the air. No, I beat my body and make it my slave so that after I have preached to others, I myself will not be disqualified for the prize.

The key is to never give up, never surrender and never stop pressing for the goal of being more like Jesus every day of our lives. We are never a failure until we give up. Consider what Jesus told Peter about forgiveness. The point Jesus was making is that we don’t keep track of how many times we forgive others; doesn’t God practices what He preaches concerning how many times He will forgive us when we miss it. True, we are not to abuse God’s grace and use it as a license for immorality according to Jude 4. However, when we are faithless, He remains faithful- 2 Timothy 2:13.

Matthew 18:21-22

Then Peter came to Jesus and asked, “Lord, how many times shall I forgive my brother when he sins against me? Up to seven times?” Jesus answered, “I tell you, not seven times, but seventy-seven times.”

Philippians 3:12-14

Not that I have already obtained all this, or have already been made perfect, but I press on to take hold of that for which Christ Jesus took hold of me. Brothers, I do not consider myself yet to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind and straining toward what is ahead, I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus.

Much of the time, believers are wrong in their thinking. More times than not, it’s not the devil who is giving them a hard time, but rather their own flesh. I am convinced that Christians will have more trouble with their flesh than they will with the devil. Why, because our flesh never leaves us. Where ever we go in this life, our sinful human nature tags along in our physical bodies- must keep it under!

1 Peter 4:1-3

Therefore, since Christ suffered in his body, arm yourselves also with the same attitude, because he who has suffered in his body is done with sin. As a result, he does not live the rest of his earthly life for evil human desires, but rather for the will of God. For you have spent enough time in the past doing what pagans choose to do — living in debauchery, lust, drunkenness, orgies, carousing and detestable idolatry.

If an evil spirit is involved trying to work through our flesh, we have authority over it. The devil and evil spirits have no dominion over us, as long as we walk in line with the Word and keep doing what we are supposed to do with our flesh. Keep standing against Satan and his schemes, because he has to flee according to James 4:7. But if it's the flesh we are dealing with, we won't be able to cast it out like we would an evil spirit. No, we have to crucify or put to death the misdeeds of the body. Everyone, from the pastor to the new believer has to do something about their own body through faith in God's Word.

Romans 8:12-14

Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation — but it is not to the sinful nature, to live according to it. For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live, because those who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God.

Colossians 3:5-10

Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. Because of these, the wrath of God is coming. You used to walk in these ways, in the life you once lived. But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

I can't stress enough that this is our responsibility and not God's. Certainly, the Holy Spirit is our helper in the areas of sanctification. However, we take the initiative, make the choices and must be willing to suffer when we say no to the lusts of our flesh that are contrary to God's Word. It hurts to deny the flesh, that's why we don't always take the way of escape that God provides for us. To walk in love towards unlovely people is not easy, and never is, but it's the sure way to victory.

1 Corinthians 10:13

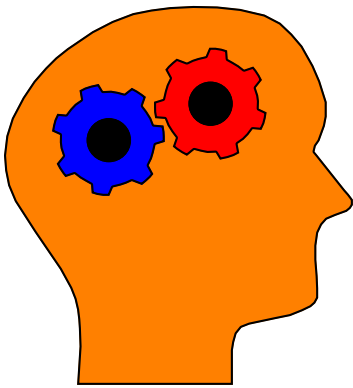
No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, he will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.

1 Corinthians 13:4-8

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. Love never fails.

We are not going to solve all our problems by just trying to deal with the devil all the time. Yes, there are times to deal with the devil, but much of the time it's our own flesh causing the problems! Consider Matthew 5:29-30, Jesus was speaking figuratively here about plucking out our eye or cutting off our hand. He was saying that sometimes it will hurt us to deal with our fleshly lusts and appetites just as much as it would be to cut off one of our bodily members.

The devil will try to gain access to us any way he can, and he will use the cravings of our own flesh to do it if we allow him to. The good news is, we don't have to allow him to. When the devil tries to use our flesh to gain access to us, it does not mean we are demon possessed. The devil will always work through the flesh because our body isn't redeemed and our five physical senses contact this world where Satan is god- 2 Corinthians 4:4. However, if we don't furnish the devil anything to work with (sin), if we don't give him any place in us, he won't have any access to us. There is a danger though for Christians who consistently practice sin and give way to the lusts of the flesh. This repeated behavior will eventually open the door to an evil spirit. The devil will accommodate believers and help them fulfill the lust of their own bodies. And eventually an evil spirit can get a hold of believers who continually indulge in the lust of their carnal, sensual nature. That is one way Satan gains access, even to believers. The devil will always help, encourage and aid people in sin and wrong doing, saved and unsaved alike. But we must always put the responsibility where it belongs, on the individual who has a free will to choose.



The real battle ground is in our minds. This is where we must be alert and ever watchful at all times. The root of all human behavior originates in thoughts that we have dwelt on. Consider Proverbs 23:7 in NKJV, *“For as he thinks in his heart, so is he”* and Proverbs 4:23, *“Above all else, guard your heart, for it is the wellspring of life.”* The Bible has much to say about our minds from renewing it with God's Word in Romans 12:2 to what kinds of things to think on in Philippians 4:8. We are told to set our minds on things above in Colossians 3:1-2 and to fix our thoughts on Jesus in Hebrews 3:1. The battle for obedience and devotion to God is won or lost on the battle fields of our minds.

2 Corinthians 10:5

We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

It is crucial for us to learn how to close the door to Satan in our thought life. If we fail in this area and think on wrong things or watch things on TV that fill our minds with junk that we just have to cast down later, we will always have problems with the devil- our mind has become an open door. We can't allow fear, worry or anxiety to reside in our thought life. The wrong way folks have treated us will try to keep us up at night in an attempt to fester into bitterness and unforgiveness.

Ephesians 4:17-19

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, with a continual lust for more.

Satan will always try to enter into a person, saved and unsaved alike, through the person's thoughts, if the person will yield and listen to him. This is what happened unwittingly to Peter when he tried to talk Jesus out from going to Jerusalem to suffer and die. He was unconsciously yielding to the devil through the power of suggestion.

Mark 8:31-33

He then began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders, chief priests and teachers of the law, and that he must be killed and after three days rise again. He spoke plainly about this, and Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. But when Jesus turned and looked at his disciples, he rebuked Peter. “Get behind me, Satan!” he said. “You do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men.”

That does not mean Peter was possessed with Satan, but rather that he had yielded to his deceptive powers of suggestion momentarily- 2 Corinthians 2:11, *“In order that Satan might not outwit us. For we are not unaware of his schemes.”* We have all done what Peter had done at one time or another in our lives. The key is to get so full of the Word that we recognize Satan’s deceptive line of thinking that tries to take root in our minds. Then we can cast down those vain imaginations and take captive every thought that is contrary to the Word of God.

Ungodly thoughts are floating around in this world as pervasive as radio stations are broadcasting their programs. The question is are we deliberately tuning out of Satan’s broadcasts and tuning into the Lord’s. We have a choice on what we think on, and that choice will set in motion how we live our lives in the future- I can’t stress this point enough my friend! We can’t stop who comes and knocks on our front door, but we can choose who we let in our home. I have caller ID on my phone, I also have a remote control for my TV. These devices empower me as to what I subject myself to, which has a direct impact on my life.

Thoughts will pop in our mind out of nowhere that are just nasty, and then the devil will come along and say, “Why, you’re not even saved or you wouldn’t even think that!” If that were true, what about Jesus in Hebrews 4:15-16, who was tempted in **“Every Way”** just as we are, yet He did not sin. It’s not a sin to have evil thoughts pass through our minds, its sin if we act on them or meditate on them. Just like it’s not a sin to be tempted, because Jesus was tempted and never sinned by obeying it. At times, even the most holy of saints finds thoughts in his mind that his heart resents- Hebrews 4:15-16.

Thoughts may come and thoughts may persist, but thoughts that are not put into action die unborn!

Romans 6:16-23

Don’t you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey — whether you are slaves to sin, which leads to death, or to obedience, which leads to righteousness? But thanks be to God that, though you used to be slaves to sin, you wholeheartedly obeyed the form of teaching to which you were entrusted. You have been set free from sin and have become slaves to righteousness. I put this in human terms because you are weak in your natural selves. Just as you used to offer the parts of your body in slavery to impurity and to ever-increasing wickedness, so now offer them in slavery to righteousness leading to holiness. When you were slaves to sin, you were free from the control of righteousness. What benefit did you reap at that time from the things you are now ashamed of? Those things result in death! But now that you have been set free from sin and have become slaves to God, the benefit you reap leads to holiness, and the result is eternal life.

When people sin, they have to repent and completely turn away from wrongdoing before we can help them. Anyone can be set free from an evil spirit if he is willing. But what that person does after he is delivered of evils spirits is of the utmost importance- Luke 11:24-26. Is he going to feed his mind on God’s Word? Is he going to get filled with the Holy Spirit and give the devil no more access to him? If a person is delivered from an evil spirit and isn’t taught the Word of God, evil spirits can enter back into him- ends up worse off. Get them in the Word so they know how to resist the devil’s attacks.

Steps to keep your Deliverance:

- 1- Get rid of the things or relationships that opened the door to devil in the first place
- 2- Avoid the very appearance of those things for the rest of your life
- 3- Read the Word of God and pray in tongues every day- stay full of the things of God
- 4- Faithfully attend a Bible believing church
- 5- Surround yourself with mature believers who will hold you accountable
- 6- Become actively involved in doing Christian ministry
- 7- Learn to forgive yourself and rejoice in the mercy and grace of God

When it comes to deliverance ministry, in most cases it's nothing but flesh that is involved, so there's nothing to "cast out"- just teach them about sanctification from the Word. In other cases, when people are being driven to do wrong, evil spirits are involved. And in other cases it can even be a combination of the two, the flesh and the devil working together. To know which category a person falls under requires wisdom in God's Word and revelation from the Holy Spirit.

Some things are more obvious. For example, you can understand how a man might get physically involved with a woman because a man has a natural desire for a woman. Of course, all sexual relations outside of marriage are expressly forbidden by Scripture- 1 Corinthians 6:18. But when it comes to a grown man molesting little children or homosexuality, that's unnatural. That's beyond just a work of the flesh; an evil spirit is involved in that kind of unnatural sexual desire, and it will have to be dealt with for deliverance to be complete.

Romans 1:26-27

Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion.

In Galatians 5:16-17, Paul is writing to Spirit-filled Christians in this passage. However, do you notice that the NIV translation of the Bible capitalizes "s" in the word "Spirit," making the passage refer to the Holy Spirit. But Paul isn't talking about the Holy Spirit in this verse; he's talking about the human spirit. As W.E. Vines points out in his Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words, there is only one word translated "spirit" from the Greek and that is "pneuma." Therefore, we have to determine by the context of the passage whether "pneuma" is referring to the human spirit or to the Holy Spirit. Galatians 5:17 says that the sinful nature desires what is "contrary" and is in "conflict," or "fights" against the recreated human spirit. Another translation says, "the flesh fights against the spirit."

Galatians 5:16-17

So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want.

1 Peter 2:11

Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul.

People are talking a lot about spiritual warfare in Christian circles today. But the biggest warfare in the Christian walk is between the flesh and the spirit. Yes, we have to deal with spiritual forces of darkness, all right. But if we get this war between our flesh and our spirit settled, we won't have to contend with Satan as much, because we won't be leaving an open door to the enemy.

Unit 9 Review:

Why is it important to understand the trichotomy of man?

What is the “Flesh” as defined by the Bible?

Are evil spirits always behind evil behavior in the lives of Christians?

Is it true that someday in this life, before Jesus returns, we won't have any more trouble with our flesh?

Where is the real battle ground in the life of the believer when dealing with the devil?

Is it important what a person does after they are delivered from demonic oppression in their life?

B) The Difference between Oppression, Obsession and Possession

The primary way Satan tries to gain access to people is through their mind and body. The degree to which a person yields to Satan in these areas determines how much Satan is able to influence them. Since man is a spirit, he has a soul and lives in a body, demons can affect and influence man in his body and soul (mind, will and emotions), yet not be present in his spirit.

To really understand how demons affect people, it's also important to understand the difference between oppression, obsession, and possession. Many people use these terms interchangeably when they are actually referring to three separate degrees of demonic influence.

Oppression

Evil spirits can exert a certain amount of influence as they seek to oppress mankind. Evil spirits can oppress anyone, even Christians if they allow it, from within or without their body or soul. Of course evil spirits have their widest range of influence if they can embody a human because then they can express themselves in the natural realm.

If evil spirits can't embody people, they will try to exert influence round about people in the spiritual realm. Many times believers, even Spirit-filled believers, can be oppressed by demons from the outside. Satan tries to oppress us by putting all kinds of pressure on us until we are keenly aware of that pressure.

Luke 4:18-19

“The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor.”

Luke 13:10-13, 16

On a Sabbath Jesus was teaching in one of the synagogues, and a woman was there who had been crippled by a spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not straighten up at all. When Jesus saw her, he called her forward and said to her, “Woman, you are set free from your infirmity.” Then he put his hands on her, and immediately she straightened up and praised God. “Then should not this woman, a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has kept bound for eighteen long years, be set free on the Sabbath day from what bound her?”

Acts 10:38 AMP

How God anointed and consecrated Jesus of Nazareth with the [Holy] Spirit and with strength and ability and power; how He went about doing good and, in particular, curing all who were harassed and oppressed by [the power of] the devil, for God was with Him.

We need to realize that there are degrees of oppression. In other words, a person can be more oppressed or less oppressed. We've probably all experienced oppression in our lives at one time or another. For example, sometimes oppression can be manifested as a spirit of fear coming against us. Other times it could manifest as a bad “mood” or dark cloud hanging over our heads. That can be the direct result of satanic oppression.

People can be more oppressed at certain times than they are at other times. But as we rebuke that oppression in the Name of Jesus, stand against it and resist it, the devil will have to flee from us- Matthew 18:18; Luke 10:19; Philippians 2:9-11; James 4:7; 1 Peter 5:9. Believers don't need to live under the oppression of the enemy- it is never God's will for His children to be oppressed! Sometimes, when oppression leaves a person, it feels just like a weight has lifted off his/her shoulders. It is important to note that Christians **cannot** be demon possessed, totally taken over spirit, soul and body. Simply because the Holy Spirit already possesses our spirit. However, an evil spirit can oppress our soul and/or body but **only** if we allow it. If we can open the door then we in turn can close that door right back on the enemy.

Colossians 1:13 AMP

[The Father] has delivered and drawn us to Himself out of the control and the dominion of darkness and has transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love.

When ministering in public, if we just cast an evil spirit out of a believer's body or mind, without explaining it to the congregation, it would cause more damage than good. Because folks will begin to think, "Well that person is saved, filled with the Holy Spirit, and a member of this church. If he has a devil in him, maybe I have a devil in me." And if they start thinking and talking like that, guess what, they can unknowingly open a door to the devil and an evil spirit will accommodate them. That's why people need to exercise wisdom when ministering in public.

So before ministering to the person, we should explain to the congregation, "Satan, not God, is the author of sickness, and disease. Sometimes there can even be a literal presence of a demon in a person's body that enforces sickness and disease. When that is the case, the evil spirit must be dealt with by the power of the Holy Spirit and in the Name of Jesus. In this person's case, I am going to cast the evil spirit out of his body. It's not in his soul or his spirit."

Here is a good illustration, if you lived in an old house that had termites in it, that doesn't mean you have termites in you. Well your body is just the house you live in. Your body is not the real you. The real you is the spirit man on the inside. And if you're born again, the spirit man can't have a devil in him. However, your body, the house of your spirit, can have an evil spirit afflicting it.

In dealing with folks suffering from mental oppression, remember we deal with the spirit and not the person- "You foul spirit that has oppressed and bound this man, I command you to loose him and let him go in the Name of Jesus. Take your hands off his mind now in Jesus' Name!" Not every case of physical or mental oppression is caused by a literal presence of a demon. We'll have to rely on the Holy Spirit to know when the literal presence of a demon is causing the affliction. In our own human knowledge or wisdom we won't know whether or not an evil spirit is present. The bible tells us to eagerly desire spiritual gifts or the manifestation of the Spirit according to 1 Corinthians 14:1- like a "Word of Knowledge" or "Discerning of spirits."

REVELATION GIFTS

Everything within the realm of knowledge- facts, events, purpose, motive, origin, destiny; human, divine, or satanic; natural or supernatural; past, present, or future- comes within the focal range of the word of wisdom(Greatest), the word of knowledge(2nd greatest) and the gift of discerning of spirits(3rd greatest of the revelation gifts). They include in their comprehensive scope all that God knows. There is nothing God knows that may not be made known to man as the Spirit wills through the operation of one or more of these three gifts!

The word of wisdom gives us a revelation of the mind and purpose of God; therefore, it is ranked first among the revelation gifts. The word of wisdom always deals with the future. The word of knowledge gives us a revelation of things present or past. The discerning of spirits gives us insight into the spirit world. It actually has a more limited range than the other revelation gifts, because its revelation is limited to a single class of objects- spirits. Revelations that the word of wisdom and the word of knowledge bring are broader and apply to people, places, and things, whereas the discerning of spirits gives supernatural insight into only the realm of spirits. It is important to realize that the gift of discerning of spirits is not just the, “discerning of devils or evil spirits” only. It is supernatural insight into the realm of spirits both good and bad. Even if these Revelation gifts are not in manifestation as the Spirit wills, we can always speak the Name of Jesus and exercise authority over the work of the enemy (either directly or indirectly) and bring deliverance in the Name of Jesus.

Obsession

If a Christian opens the door to the devil, the devil will come in and can eventually possess his body or soul if given free access to them over a period of time. However, in the case of a Christian, a demon cannot inhabit his spirit unless the believer meets the conditions stated in Hebrews 6:4-6; 10:26-27. For the majority of Christians, they will never reach the level of spiritual maturity which would put them in a position to commit the sin unto death. The sin unto death can only be committed by a mature Christian by willfully denying Christ from the heart, with deliberate forethought- 1 John 5:16-17. So Christians don't need to be preoccupied with wondering whether or not they are possessed by the devil in their spirit. If they are concerned that they might be, it's a sure sign they aren't. However, Christians can open a door to the devil in other areas of their lives.

We need to be on guard that we never allow our minds to become fixated or obsessed on things contrary to God's Word like fear or worry for instance. First a thought starts out as a vain imagination in the mind, if one continues to give attention to it and think on it, in time it will grow into an obsession and become a stronghold for the enemy. Unfortunately, even for Christians this can lead to insanity. When ministering to people who have lost their minds, it requires special attention.

Here's something else we need to understand. The prayer of faith won't work in every situation. This is an instance where the prayer of faith wouldn't work because an insane person would not be in a position mentally to agree with you and to use his/her own faith. Now don't misunderstand me, the prayer of faith will work in those situations where it is supposed to work. But when another person's will is involved, we won't always be able to pray the prayer of faith unless the person is in agreement with us according to Matthew 18:19. So if the person we are dealing with is insane, their deliverance couldn't come about through the operation of his/her faith. Some people have tried to make the prayer of faith work in every situation and in every circumstance. In some cases, it's sort of like trying to put a square peg in a round hole; it wouldn't work. In other words, there are different kinds of prayer, and they each have their own rules for their successful operation. So what is the correct stance to take in dealing with the mentally insane, begin to pray in tongues and seek God for guidance and direction. We would need the leading of the Spirit and rely on Him to know how to deal with cases like this- Zechariah 4:6, “*Not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit, says the Lord Almighty.*” If we try to go ahead in our own strength and power, nothing happens.

1 Corinthians 2:1-5

When I came to you, brothers, I did not come with eloquence or superior wisdom as I proclaimed to you the testimony about God. For I resolved to know nothing while I was with you except Jesus Christ and him crucified. I came to you in weakness and fear, and with much trembling. My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the Spirit's power, so that your faith might not rest on men's wisdom, but on God's power.

The secret to successful deliverance ministry is to rely on the Word of God, His power and might and His Spirit in order to be successful in life. If we allow the Greater One to rise up big in us and give illumination to our minds and direction to our spirits, we will get the victory every time. Remember, the Holy Spirit will always lead us in line with the holy written Word of God.

Acts 13:2-3

While they were worshipping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them.” So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

Casting out a demon in a situation like this (ministering to the insane) has to be done under the anointing and power of the Holy Spirit. Even Jesus, during His earthly ministry, like us was dependent upon the manifestation of the Holy Spirit to perform miracles and healings. Jesus had the Spirit without limit (John 3:34), but still needed the Holy Spirit to manifest according to the nine manifestations of the Spirit in 1 Corinthians chapter 12.

Luke 5:17

One day as he was teaching, Pharisees and teachers of the law, who had come from every village of Galilee and from Judea and Jerusalem, were sitting there. And the power of the Lord was present for him to heal the sick.

Hebrews 2:3-4

How shall we escape if we ignore such a great salvation? This salvation, which was first announced by the Lord, was confirmed to us by those who heard him. God also testified to it by signs, wonders and various miracles, and gifts of the Holy Spirit distributed according to his will.

When the manifestation of “Special Faith” or the “Gift of Faith” in 1 Corinthians 12:9 is in operation, the Holy Spirit gives us faith to do whatever He says to do and it will always work. When it comes to dealing with devils in other people’s lives, such as in the case of insanity, they are unable to give their consent or permission, we must be led by the Spirit in what to do. If the Holy Spirit doesn’t tell us to do something, then we’re just doing it on our own, and we’ll fall flat on our face. However, if people ask us for help and give their permission, then we can exercise authority over the devil in their lives in the Name of Jesus according to Mark 16:17. I like what Luke 11:20 says, it conjures up images of God flicking demons out of folks lives as we would a little ant that had crawled up on our arm.

Luke 11:20

But if I drive out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come to you.

Remember, once a person is delivered, we are obligated to follow up with them and teach them how to stand against the devil for themselves. Of course, in dealing with the devil in our own life, we don’t need someone else to rebuke the devil for us. If we are submitted to God, we have authority over the devil to resist him, stand against him, rebuke him, and he has to flee- Luke 9:1; Ephesians 6:13; James 4:7. Sometimes, when an evil spirit comes out of a person, it will do so violently. Do not be concerned, it would be just a last gasp of the evil spirit as it leaves the person.

Mark 9:25-27

When Jesus saw that a crowd was running to the scene, he rebuked the evil spirit. “You deaf and mute spirit,” he said, “I command you, come out of him and never enter him again.” The spirit shrieked, convulsed him violently and came out. The boy looked so much like a corpse that many said, “He’s dead.” But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him to his feet, and he stood up.

If the evil spirit does not appear to leave immediately, don't let it trouble you. When the command of faith is spoken by the unction and power of the Holy Spirit, it doesn't necessarily bring instant results, but it always brings results. In review, obsession begins with a thought, if not dealt with, the thought festers into an imagination. Over time with more and more attention given to it by the individual, these imaginations turn into an obsession. When people allow the devil to gain more and more access to their thinking, and keep yielding to it, an evil spirit will finally be able to possess their soul- mind, will and emotions.

Romans 6:16

Don't you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey — whether you are slaves to sin, which leads to death, or to obedience, which leads to righteousness?

Possession

As we have seen, a person can be oppressed or obsessed in their soul; that is, in their mind or emotional realm, even if they are a Christian. And even a Christian can be oppressed by a demon or an evil spirit in his/her body from within or without. But that is not the same as demon possession. Remember, total possession implies being giving over, spirit, soul and body to an evil spirit because to possess something means to own it.

Therefore, it's erroneous and unscriptural to say a Christian can be possessed by an evil spirit. Certainly, no Christian can have a devil in their spirit, or you couldn't call the person a Christian anymore. We need to be careful with our terminology and define what we really mean by certain expressions. Also, we must realize that there is a vast difference between being oppressed, influenced by, yielded to demons or obsessed by them, and in being fully possessed by demons.

The Greek word that is translated "possessed" also carries with it the sense of being under the power of or the influence of a demon. It seems the biblical use of the word "demonized" has a broad meaning, and it includes being afflicted or even influenced by demons. In its widest range to be demonized includes not only possession, but also oppression, and obsession and can actually include any activity of the devil which influences mankind- to be affected by the works of the devil.

Ephesians 2:1-2

As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

Our thinking is not clear along this line many times because our terms and their meanings aren't clear. For example, if someone asks, "Can a Christian be possessed by a devil?" the question the person may be trying to ask is, "Can a Christian be demonized?" In other words, can a Christian be oppressed or obsessed or influenced by or yielded to evil spirits? Expressed that way, the answer is yes. A Christian can be "demonized" by evil spirits. But, no, a Christian cannot be fully possessed spirit, soul, and body by evil spirits. Certainly, the devil could eventually possess any part of a person who continually yields to him and gives him more and more access.

Sometimes even within full possession in unbelievers, there can be degrees of possession. In other words, one can be more fully or less fully controlled by the devil. A person is partially possessed if only his mind or soul is possessed by an evil spirit. And even in partial possession of the mind or soul, there are degrees of possession. One can be more or less possessed and controlled by the devil. In other words, one could be more or less in control of his own faculties.

Let's now look at a Biblical account of full or total demon possession. The madman of Gadara was possessed by a demon- spirit, soul and body.

Mark 5:1-20 NKJV

Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gadarenes. And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with **an unclean spirit**, who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with chains, because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones.

When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. And he cried out with a loud voice and said, "What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me."

For He said to him, "**Come out of the man, unclean spirit!**" Then He asked him, "What is your name?"

And he answered, saying, "**My name is Legion; for we are many.**" Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country.

Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. So all the demons begged Him, saying, "Send us to the swine, that we may enter them." And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then **the unclean spirits** went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea.

So those who fed the swine fled, and they told it in the city and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that had happened. Then they came to Jesus, and saw the one who had been **demon-possessed and had the legion**, sitting and clothed and in his right mind. And they were afraid. And those who saw it told them how it happened to him who had been **demon-possessed**, and about the swine. Then they began to plead with Him to depart from their region.

And when He got into the boat, **he who had been demon-possessed** begged Him that he might be with Him. However, Jesus did not permit him, but said to him, "Go home to your friends, and tell them what great things the Lord has done for you, and how He has had compassion on you." And he departed and began to proclaim in Decapolis all that Jesus had done for him; and all marveled.

There are many observations to be made with this account:

1. Not a Christian

This man had not been born again since Jesus had not yet be raised from the dead. However, he evidently wanted to be free. There is a vast difference between a person who is struggling to be free from satanic power, and one who willingly yields himself to Satan again and again and does not want to be free from Satan's dominion.

- Jesus met the madman with compassion- Mark 5:19
- Jesus commanded and the man was set free- Mark 5:13; Luke 8:32
- Immediately the man's appearance had changed- Mark 5:15
- The man wanted to go with Jesus, but instead the Lord told him to testify- Luke 8:38-39

2. Demonized in Cases of Insanity

Apparently, cases of insanity are still the same in nature and cause as they were in the days of Jesus. In Jesus' day insanity was a matter of demon activity either directly or indirectly. In this man's particular case, the literal presence of an evil spirit was the direct cause of this man's insanity.

3. The term "unclean spirits"

In Mark 5:2, 8 & 13 the reference to "unclean spirits" were made. Certainly in a general sense all evil spirits are unclean. Indicating the nature of an evil spirit as a fallen eternal spirit being. That is where the NIV version uses the general term of "evil spirits." However, specifically speaking other translations use the term "unclean spirit," referring to its type or kind, as in the case of the madman of Gadara.

Demons are eternal evil personalities, and when evil spirits do embody a man, they make man what they are. In other words, a person will take on the character and personality of the type or kind of evil spirit that is influencing them. We know that the word "unclean" was not the name of the demon, because in Mark 5:9, we find its name was "Legion." It's obvious that this man took on the characteristics of the unclean spirit. The unclean spirit caused the man to tear off his clothes, to wander around naked, and to cut himself with stones- Mark 5:5; Luke 8:27.

It's likely this evil spirit was manifested through this man in connection with the sexual appetites of man. This fellow was probably a masochist, deriving sexual pleasure from suffering physical pain. We see that this unclean spirit made the madman of Gadara what it was, because as soon as the man was delivered and restored to his right mind, he put on clothes. Note also that as a result of his deliverance, he sat at the feet of Jesus and began to learn from Him.

4. A Matter of Preference

Another key element to notice in Mark chapter five is that when the evil spirits could no longer embody or possess this man, as a second choice they sought embodiment in animals. These demons asked Jesus for permission to go into the swine in Mark 5:12. Interesting note, at that time Jesus living under the Old Covenant, and the Mosaic dietary laws forbid the eating of pigs. So one could say that Jesus killed two birds with one stone, delivered the man of demons and got rid of the pigs.

5. Possession by One Demon

Another important element in this passage is found in Mark 5:2, "*And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with **an unclean spirit.***" The word "spirit" is singular. That's the first evidence we have that only one spirit does the possessing.

Soon after His encounter with this man, Jesus told the unclean spirit to come out of the man, "*For He said to him, 'Come out of the man, unclean spirit'*" in Mark 5:8. But the unclean spirit does not come out of the man. So then Jesus asked: "What is your name?" The unclean spirit answered, "My name is legion for we are many." That indicated there was only one spirit that did the possessing, and it was an unclean spirit named Legion. In this case, "Legion" refers not only to the name of the unclean spirit but also to its number. This one evil spirit that was an unclean spirit was named Legion, and by its name we know that it brought in with it many other evil spirits to inhabit the man. In other words, the whole legion didn't possess the man, although the legion of devils were in the man too. Only one devil did the possessing, and he brought with him a legion of other devils. This is quite typical. It's not possible for an unbeliever to be possessed by a legion of demons.

Matthew 12 gives us more insight about evil spirits and their operation.

Matthew 12:43-45 NKJV

“When an unclean spirit goes out of a man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest, and finds none. Then he says, ‘I will return to my house from which I came.’ And when he comes, he finds it empty, swept, and put in order. Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter and dwell there; and the last state of that man is worse than the first.”

6. Demons, Evil Entities

Although we don’t know the exact origin of evil spirits, we do know they are eternal fallen beings or eternal evil personalities.

- a. As personalities, demons can talk according to verse 44. As in the case of the madman of Gadara, when a person is fully possessed, the demon can speak through the person.
- b. As personalities, demons can think and they have the capacity to make decisions; which gives them intelligence. *“I will return to my house...”* in verse 44.
- c. As personalities, demons can communicate with other evil spirits: *“Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself...”* in verse 45.
- d. Apparently there are varying degrees of “wickedness” according to verse 45.

The fact that the demon came back with other spirits more wicked than itself, denotes planning and a certain amount of intelligence in the ranks of evil spirits. Which coincides with Ephesians 6:12, which speaks of Satan’s hierarchy, rank and division in the kingdom of darkness. With the first rank being “Principalities” all the way up to the top of the food chain, “wicked spirits.”

Ephesians 6:12 NKJV

For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

- a. Principalities
- b. Powers
- c. Rulers of the Darkness
- d. Spiritual hosts or “Wicked Spirits”(other translations) in earth’s atmosphere

7. Coming Back Again

In verse 44, the evil spirit says “I will return to my house from which I came...” which shows that the devil is persistent in his attacks and does not let up on his maneuvers and operations against us. The devil will always try to return after he has been cast out of a person. He will endeavor to go right back to the “house” he had left, and he will always keep on in his attempts to entice the person to do wrong or to bring sickness and disease back on them.

We can see this principle at work in the case of an unsaved person. If they get saved, the devil will always try to get back into that person’s life. Satan tries to get baby Christians to do wrong just as they had done before they were saved, many times trying to influence them to return to their former lifestyle. That’s why new believers must be disciplined, rooted and grounded in the Word of God, so they can stand against the attacks of the enemy.

We can also see the principle of Matthew 12:43-45 at work in the life of a person who has been delivered from sickness or disease. The Bible calls sickness and disease satanic oppression in Acts 10:38 and in Luke 13:16 where a spirit of infirmity attached itself to this woman. Many times, the devil tries to put the same sickness or disease right back on someone who was healed.

Of course, not every case of sickness and disease is caused by the direct presence of an evil spirit. But sometimes sickness or disease is the result of the presence of an evil spirit that is enforcing the affliction. That is why it is not enough just to cast an evil spirit out of a person who is afflicted with sickness or disease. The person must be taught the Word so they can stand against the devil for themselves, because Satan will always try to return with the same sickness, disease, condition, or sin. Teach them not only how to get free, but also to stay free!

When we cast evil spirits out of folks minds or bodies, if we fail to get the Word in them, we can do them a huge injustice, because the Bible says they can end up seven times worse than they were before. We need to teach them the Word concerning the believer's authority in Jesus; a place of victory and triumph far above principalities and powers.

As Christians, we are seated in heavenly places in Christ, and therefore we look down on Satan and his hosts from a place of triumph, not fear or defeat- Ephesians 1:3, 2:5-6. So if we are going to deal biblically with the kingdom of darkness, we need to always be mindful of that triumphant position as joint-heirs with Christ. It is a position of authority in Christ over the devil and all his works and operations against us.

C) Spiritual Warfare: Are we Wrestling or Resting?

Spiritual warfare is a subject some Christians are overemphasizing today in a way that is not in line with the Word of God. Actually, some of what is being taught in the Body of Christ in this area of spiritual warfare and demonology is scripturally in error. That's why it would benefit us to study the Word to see how to deal scripturally with Satan and his strategies. Many believers become fearful if we talk about the devil, demons, and evil spirits and their activities. Many people seem to think it would be better not to even mention the devil or evil spirits. But if we don't teach believers scripturally from the Word of God how to deal with the devil, the enemy will just run rampant and take inroads in their lives because they won't know how to exercise their scriptural authority.

2 Corinthians 2:11 AMP

To keep Satan from getting the advantage over us; for we are not ignorant of his wiles and intentions.

We need to know our enemy. The Bible says we are not to be ignorant of Satan's devices and schemes. Satan has not changed the least bit over the millennia. The devil is the same old devil he has always been, and he uses the same tactics he has always used, just in a different wrapper to keep up with the times. That is why the Bible is relevant for us today in this area of dealing with the kingdom of darkness. One of Satan's devices is to get people off into the extreme, even in the area of spiritual warfare, so they become unfruitful in the Kingdom of God.

It seems on any Bible subject, it's a challenge for the Body of Christ to stay in the middle of the road. Many believers either get in the ditch on one side of the road or on the other side. In either ditch, they become ineffective because extremes and excesses never produce any fruit to the glory of God. This wrong thinking and wrong believing in this area has actually opened the door to the devil. Wrong thinking and wrong believing always leads to wrong actions.

There is legitimate scriptural warfare, of course. Spiritual warfare is a Bible subject and one that we should be interested in because every one of us must take our stand in spiritual warfare at one time or another in our Christian life. After all, there is a truth to the fact that there is an adversary arrayed against us and that we are in the army of the Lord. However, people often take these truths and run off with them into extremes and error. Their thinking seems to be:

“Well, an army fights the enemy to defeat him, so let’s fight the devil so we can defeat him.”

The problem with that line of thinking is that Jesus had already met the devil in spiritual combat and soundly defeated him once and for all 2,000 years ago. So what is our posture to be in regards to the devil today?

Enforce his Defeat!

That is why the King James Version of Luke 19:13 says, *“Occupy, till I come.”* We’re to take our stand on the Word against a defeated foe. Therefore, we are in the army of the Lord, all right, but it’s an occupying army. The occupying army is not in battle, but rather policing a conquered territory. The occupying army is just enforcing the victory that’s already been won by our Commander in Chief, the Lord Jesus Christ. That’s why believers shouldn’t magnify the battle; they should magnify the triumph!

1. The use of ‘War’ and ‘Warfare’ in the Epistles

We will find that real spiritual warfare is entirely different from what many people think it is. For example, as we study the New Testament, particularly the epistles (Romans – Revelation), it is amazing how seldom the words “war” and “warfare” are mentioned- never once are the words “devil” or “Satan” used in connection with them. In the scripture example below, we see comparison or parallels made in reference to the military but not in connection with the devil.

1 Corinthians 9:7

Who serves as a soldier at his own expense? Who plants a vineyard and does not eat of its grapes? Who tends a flock and does not drink of the milk?

2 Timothy 2:4-7

No one serving as a soldier gets involved in civilian affairs — he wants to please his commanding officer. Similarly, if anyone competes as an athlete, he does not receive the victor’s crown unless he competes according to the rules. 6 The hardworking farmer should be the first to receive a share of the crops. Reflect on what I am saying, for the Lord will give you insight into all this.

One area of wrong thinking as it pertains to spiritual warfare, is in the area of believers trying to fight the devil and pull down strongholds over cities and nations. We need to look at that practice in light of God’s Word to see if it’s scriptural. We need to know what the Word of God says on any subject and think and believe and act in line with God’s Word. Then we will get Bible results- Amen!

In 2 Corinthians 10:3-6, we see references made to war, fighting and weapons. However, these verses are often taken out of context to say anything folks want them to say. For instance, this passage of scripture has been widely used to apply to battling demons over cities and countries. But it’s clear by the context that Paul is talking about something different. Paul isn’t referring to battling demonic forces over geographical areas. He is admonishing believers to take control of their own thoughts and imaginations so they can prevent the devil’s lies from getting a stronghold in their minds. The devil can’t get into a believer’s life unless the door is open. An undisciplined mind and wrong thinking have as much to do with opening the door to the devil as wrong believing and wrong talking do.

That's how believers allow the devil to build strongholds in their minds and lives. Believers need to know those are the major battlefields of life.

2 Corinthians 10:3-6

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ. And we will be ready to punish every act of disobedience, once your obedience is complete.

Consider Galatians 6:7-10, this passage was written to Christians, not to unbelievers. Believers are going to reap what they sow- whether it is good or bad. Believers are sowing words and actions every day from which they will eventually reap a harvest (good or bad); demonic activity is not necessarily even involved. This particularly applies to words since life and death are in the power of the tongue.

Galatians 6:7-10

Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows. The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life. Let us not become weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up. Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.

Here is another passage where Paul told Timothy to fight the good fight of the "Faith." How is this done, by holding onto faith and a good conscience. In other words, Paul was simply telling Timothy, "Stay in the fight of faith. Fulfill the call of God on your life. That is how you are going to war a good warfare in this life."

1 Timothy 1:18-20

Timothy, my son, I give you this instruction in keeping with the prophecies once made about you, so that by following them you may fight the good fight, holding on to faith and a good conscience. Some have rejected these and so have shipwrecked their faith.

In James, the fights and battles he was addressing was among believers and the works of the flesh and it had nothing to do with the devil. According to James, spiritual warfare has to do mostly with fighting the lusts of our own flesh that war against our lives in order to destroy our spiritual development and hinder our growth in Christ.

James 4:1-5

What causes fights and quarrels among you? Don't they come from your desires that battle within you? You want something but don't get it. You kill and covet, but you cannot have what you want. You quarrel and fight. You do not have, because you do not ask God. When you ask, you do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures. You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God.

1 Peter 2:11-12

Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul. Live such good lives among the pagans that, though they accuse you of doing wrong, they may see your good deeds and glorify God on the day he visits us.

We need to crucify our flesh today just as the Christians did back then- Galatians 5:24. When we don't crucify the flesh and "keep our bodies under" in 1 Corinthians 9:27, we can count on having trouble in life, and it's not even necessarily demonically inspired. Paul also referred to the unregenerate flesh warring against the mind in Romans 7:23.

Romans 7:23 AMP

But I discern in my bodily members [in the sensitive appetites and wills of the flesh] a different law (rule of action) at war against the law of my mind (my reason) and making me a prisoner to the law of sin that dwells in my bodily organs [in the sensitive appetites and wills of the flesh].

We have looked at scriptures in the epistles where the words "war, fight, weapons" and "battle" are used. The devil isn't mentioned one single time in any of these scriptures. Yet to hear some people talk, you would think spiritual warfare is the only subject in the Bible!

Those who wage a good warfare keep their mind renewed and their flesh in check and know how to stand in faith on the promises in God's Word. As a result, the believer will have no difficulty in enjoying great victory over the devil who was defeated, stripped of his power, paralyzed, brought to naught, and reduced to nothing nearly 2,000 years ago by the Lord Jesus Christ. Rather than always trying to stand against something, why don't we just stand for something- the truth of the Word of God and Jesus' victory over Satan in His death, burial, resurrection and seating at the right hand of the Father.

1 Timothy 6:12

Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of the eternal life to which you were called when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

We need to stay on the offensive, preaching the Word, not on the defensive; constantly trying to battle a defeated foe as if we have to "defeat" him again and regain the victory Jesus already won for us!

2. Do Christians Wrestle with Demons?

So we can see that the epistles uses the words "war" and "fight" to describe the conflict between the flesh and mind and between the flesh and the recreated spirit. Then what does the Bible have to say about "wrestling"? Does the New Testament teach that believers need to wrestle with demons?



all the fiery darts of the wicked one. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

Ephesians 6:10-17 NKJV

Wrestling denotes strenuous effort, doesn't it? According to these scriptures, we do "wrestle" or as the NIV puts it "struggle" against the devil. We do have the devil to deal with in life, but read that verse in context with the whole counsel of God's Word- that Jesus defeated Satan for us and redeemed us from Satan's dominion. Well, what does the scriptural word for "wrestling" mean, "war"? No, certainly not! There is a vast difference between wrestling and warring. If you've ever seen a wrestling match, you know there is a vast difference between wrestling and fighting a war.

One of the meanings of the word "wrestle" in W.E. Vines Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words is to *sway*. If we will let him, the enemy will come against us and try to *sway* us and get us out of faith and into doubt and unbelief about the Word so he can defeat us. But if we stand our ground in faith, he cannot sway us from the Word. Therefore, the "wrestling" we do is not fighting the devil, but it is a "fight" sometimes to hold fast to our faith in God's Word in the midst of trials, tests and temptations that try to knock us off balance, distract and rattle our cage. In a desperate attempt to discourage, frustrate and pressure us to give up and give in and quit. But our response is, "*Having done all, to stand. Stand!*"

The word "wrestling" in Ephesians 6:12 is used figuratively, just as the word "run" is used figuratively in Hebrews 12:1, "*let us run with perseverance the race marked out for us.*" The Bible doesn't use the word "wrestle" to tell believers to get into heavy spiritual combat to wrestle against the devil in prayer. No, the Bible is trying to show believers that our opposition in this life comes from the spiritual realm and that we are not to fight against people, but we are to take our stand on the Word of God and enforce our victory against a defeated foe.

Sadly, some Christians have taken "wrestling" and resorted to fleshly tactics such as yelling and screaming at the devil to try to "defeat" him. The wrestling the believer does against the forces of evil is not done in the natural realm with fleshly tactics. It's done in the spiritual realm by faith in God's Word.

3. How did the Early Church deal with Spiritual Warfare?

I like mentioning Stephen, because his outstanding qualities consisted of being full of the Word of God and the Spirit. To be full of God's grace and power is to do exploits, one has to be full of God's Word and the Holy Spirit- prayed up!

Acts 6:3-5, 8

"Brothers, choose seven men from among you who are known to be full of the Spirit and wisdom. We will turn this responsibility over to them and will give our attention to prayer and the ministry of the word." This proposal pleased the whole group. They chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit...Now Stephen, a man full of God's grace and power, did great wonders and miraculous signs among the people.

When Peter and John were released from jail and had been threatened by the religious leaders, what was their response in Acts 4:23? They asked God for more boldness to speak God's Word. Spiritual warfare for the believer begins and ends with speaking God's Word in prayer, ministry, deliverance etc.

Acts 4:23-24, 29-31

On their release, Peter and John went back to their own people and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said to them. When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God. "Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. Stretch out your hand to heal and perform miraculous signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus." After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.

How about Paul and Silas when they were thrown into the Philippian jail for setting a slave girl from demon possession. Clearly, the devil was the one stirring up those people against them. As I had mentioned already, Paul's thorn in his flesh was a messenger of Satan sent to follow him wherever he went in order to stir up persecution for him and make his way difficult- 2 Corinthians 12:7. However, Paul and Silas pulled out a potent spiritual weapon called "Praise & Worship." They praised God until the power of the Holy Spirit came down. Praying and singing praises is a type of scriptural "wrestling" in the spiritual realm because we have to stay in faith to do it- God always responds to faith, Hebrews 11:6.

Acts 16:25-26

About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them. Suddenly there was such a violent earthquake that the foundations of the prison were shaken. At once all the prison doors flew open, and everybody's chains came loose.

The greatest form of spiritual warfare is found in the believer offering his/her body unto God as a living sacrifice and renewing one's mind with the Word of God.

Romans 12:1-2

Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God — this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind.

This fight is simply based on standing firmly on the promises of God's Word and on the finished work of our redemption in Jesus Christ.

It is crucial to point out, that we engage the enemy not in our own strength, but through the power of God. Folks will say, "Well, I'm trying to be strong." But the Bible does not say a thing about being strong in ourselves- 2 Corinthians 12:10 AMP, "*For when I am weak [in human strength], then am I [truly] strong (able, powerful in divine strength).*"

Ephesians 6:10 AMP

In conclusion, be strong in the Lord [be empowered through your union with Him]; draw your strength from Him [that strength which His boundless might provides].

Many times in the circumstances we face in life, we can feel weak, empty, and helpless in ourselves. But thank God, we can lean on the promises of God. We can go to the Rock, Jesus Christ and stand fast on His Word.

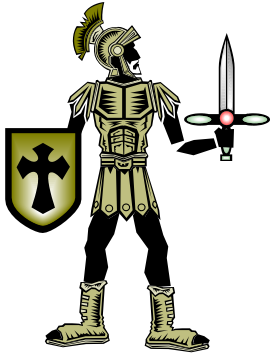
2 Corinthians 1:8-11

We do not want you to be uninformed, brothers, about the hardships we suffered in the province of Asia. We were under great pressure, far beyond our ability to endure, so that we despaired even of life. Indeed, in our hearts we felt the sentence of death. But this happened **that we might not rely on ourselves but on God, who raises the dead. He has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and he will deliver us. On him we have set our hope that he will continue to deliver us, as you help us by your prayers. Then many will give thanks on our behalf for the gracious favor granted us in answer to the prayers of many.**

Trusting in God is trusting in His Word. This is where many believers are missing it; they're trying to be strong in their own strength and don't realize all the strength they need is found in the Word.

4. The Armor of God

One way we become strong in the Lord is by putting on the whole armor of God according to Ephesians 6:11-18. We put on the full armor (not just part of it) for two reasons:



1. We wear the armor of God for protection in our prayer life. Once we have the armor on, we are ready to pray, we are dressed for prayer. The object of putting on the armor is so we can enter into prayer.
2. We wear the armor to help us stand in life against the tactics, trials, tests and temptations of the devil.

If we need the armor of God to make us strong in the Lord, then we need to take a closer look at it.

Ephesians 6:11

Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes.

The word “put” in Strong’s Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible is *enduo*. It has the sense of *sinking into a garment; to invest with clothing; to array or clothe; to endue, have, or put on something*. So in reference to what the Bible is saying, we put on the armor of God in this fashion. The purpose for putting it on, is to use it or do something with it.

Ephesians 6:13-14

Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand.

As we have been saying, our stand is always on God’s Word, that is the foundation that will never be shaken or collapse. But it’s not just hearing the Word, but putting it into practice by speaking it out of our mouths and doing what it says.

Matthew 7:24-27

“Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash.”

a. The Belt

Ephesians 6:14- Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist

Represents a clear understanding of God’s Word. We present ourselves to God by correctly handling the Word according to 2 Timothy 2:15. Like a soldier’s belt, it holds the rest of the armor in place. We are not going to get anywhere in prayer unless the Word of God abides in us- John 15:7. A successful prayer life must be based on the promises in God’s Word.

b. The Breastplate

Ephesians 6:14- The breastplate of righteousness in place

That refers to our right standing with God. When we accept Jesus, we become the righteousness of God in Christ- 2 Corinthians 5:21. We would not be any match against the devil if we didn't have right standing with God. But it's not just having it, but knowing what it is and means for us as New Covenant children and heirs of God- Romans 8:17; Ephesians 2:6.

c. Feet Fitted with Readiness

Ephesians 6:15- with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace

To be effective in prayer, we must walk in the light of God's Word- 1 John 1:7; Psalms 119:130. It's hard to walk when the path before us is dark. However, with the light of God's Word to guide us and reveal the truth, we never have to walk in darkness; under Satan's dominion or be taken advantage of by his lies and deception. As soon as the light of God's Word comes, faith is there. Feeding and meditating on God's Word brings light and faith- Romans 10:17. Faith in God's Word is our major defense against Satan's onslaughts against our mind and life.

d. Shield of Faith

Ephesians 6:16-17- In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.

Next, in addition to all this, we must take the shield of faith. The Bible puts such a great emphasis on the shield of faith, because that's what we use to extinguish the enemies fiery arrows that are launched against us. Using the shield of faith is a daily task of keeping the enemy from diverting our attention from prayer and seeking first the Kingdom of God. At all costs, the enemy wants to keep us from staying in faith in God's Word- to shipwreck our faith- 1 Timothy 1:19-20.

e. Helmet of Salvation

Ephesians 6:17- Take the helmet of salvation

The helmet of salvation is the knowledge of our position in God because of our salvation and redemption in Jesus- directly related to the prayers Paul prayed for the Church in Ephesians 1:17-22. The helmet of salvation includes having our mind renewed in order that we may know who we are in Christ. The helmet protects our mind – Satan's chief battleground.

f. Sword of the Spirit

Ephesians 6:17-18- The sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God

Every part of the armor of God is defensive by nature except for this one. The sword of the Spirit, the Word of God is the only part of the armor that we fight Satan with. The Word of God spoken out of our mouths becomes the sword of our spirit against the enemy. That is what Jesus used when He had defeated the devil's temptations.

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

2 Corinthians 6:7

In truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left.

Luke 4:3-4

The devil said to him, "If you are the Son of God, tell this stone to become bread." Jesus answered, "It is written: 'Man does not live on bread alone.'"

Did you notice what the Bible said after the devil was soundly beaten during the temptations of Jesus in the desert in Luke 4:13, *“When the devil had finished all this tempting, he left him until an opportune time.”* Thus illustrating the reality that the enemy is persistent, so we have to be more so in standing on and speaking the Word out of our mouths! For one thing, Jesus never went looking for the devil to do spiritual combat with him. But when the devil came with his temptations to oppose Jesus, the Lord did not groan, scream and yell at the devil for hours or try to pull down Satan’s strongholds. Jesus was protected by truth and righteousness, so He simply stood His ground and used the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God- used God’s Word as a sword against the devil. So if Jesus wrestled with the devil using the Word, then that’s how we should deal with the devil too- *“It is written!”* So, having done all to stand, stand on God’s Word and we will win every time. 2 Corinthians 1:24, *“because it is by faith you stand firm.”*

1 Corinthians 16:13-14

Be on your guard; stand firm in the faith; be men of courage; be strong. Do everything in love.

Power in the Blood of Jesus:

What else does it mean to, “be strong in the Lord and in His mighty power” in Ephesians 6:10. We can’t be strong in the Lord without appropriating the saving power of His blood.

Colossians 1:13-14 AMP

[The Father] has delivered and drawn us to Himself out of the control and the dominion of darkness and has transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love, In Whom we have our redemption through His blood, [which means] the forgiveness of our sins.

We have been redeemed, bought with a price, ransomed and delivered from the clutches of the enemy only through the spilled blood of Jesus on Calvary. When we have a solid foundation of understanding concerning the power that is in the Blood of Jesus, what an advantage we have to walk in spiritual victory in this life. When we sin, we understand that in 1 John 1:9, we can confess those sins to God and the blood of Jesus is just as fresh to wash us from a guilty conscience. The accuser of the brethren, has no basis of a case against us, or legal right to oppresses us with his curses due to breaking God’s law.

Revelation 12:11 AMP

And they have overcome (conquered) him by means of the blood of the Lamb and by the utterance of their testimony...

If a deadly snake was to bite you, just say “I plead the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ against this snake bite!” When we understand the power in the blood of Jesus and stand on our covenant rights of protection, we will never experience any harm. In Mark 16:18 addresses protection against anything poisonous and 1 John 5:18 tells us that God keeps us safe from the evil one, who cannot harm us!

Acts 28:3-6

Paul gathered a pile of brushwood and, as he put it on the fire, a viper, driven out by the heat, fastened itself on his hand. When the islanders saw the snake hanging from his hand, they said to each other, “This man must be a murderer; for though he escaped from the sea, Justice has not allowed him to live.” But Paul shook the snake off into the fire and suffered no ill effects. The people expected him to swell up or suddenly fall dead, but after waiting a long time and seeing nothing unusual happen to him, they changed their minds and said he was a god.

Instead of talking about how big and bad the devil is, let’s magnify the victory we have in our blood covenant through Jesus Christ- over all the works of the devil.

Since Satan is a defeated foe, now it is up to us to take our stand against him in the faith and also in the grace the Lord Jesus has provided us. There is a grace of God, given through His Word that we must stand upon. It's only our faith in God's Word that will enable us to stand successfully against the devil.

Romans 5:1-2

Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have gained access by faith into **this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God.**

Hebrews 4:16

Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may **receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need.**

Acts 20:32

“Now I commit you to God and to **the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.”**

Fervent in Prayer

Another way the believer continues to be filled with the Holy Spirit so they can stand in the power of God's might is by being active in prayer.

James 5:16

Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

James 5:16 AMP

The earnest (heartfelt, continued) prayer of a righteous man **makes tremendous power available [dynamic in its working].**

Ephesians 5:18 AMP

And do not get drunk with wine, for that is debauchery; but ever be filled and stimulated with the [Holy] Spirit.

The power of God is always available, but prayer brings that power into manifestation. Earnest, fervent prayer makes tremendous power available. It is also one way the believer gets filled to overflowing with the Holy Spirit, the power of God to stand strong against the enemy. Once we have put on the full armor of God we have become strong in the Lord and in the power of His might, then we are ready to pray. With the armor on, we are ready to make tremendous power available by the help of the Holy Spirit- that is when our prayers become powerful and effective!

Ephesians 6:18

And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

How does prayer relate to spiritual warfare? True spiritual warfare first takes place in the believer's own mind and flesh; then through the prayer of faith. Many times the victory is won, simply by standing our ground on the Word in the arena of prayer. Many times the reason we're not ready for battles we encounter in the natural realm in life is that we haven't entered into the prayer arena and the fight of faith as we should in the spiritual realm. To say it another way, we're not "prayed up" and full of the Holy Spirit. When we are not prayed up, it's easy to be defeated when tested by the enemy.

Notice that Paul makes mention of “*always keep on praying for all the saints.*” This speaks of a consistent prayer life, a lifestyle of prayer that never gives up, stops or takes a break. This kind of prayer is not about trying to dethrone Satan or pull down strongholds over communities, cities, states, or nations. Paul is talking about a lifestyle of communion and fellowship with God so we can resist the tactics and deceptions of the enemy that try to discourage and defeat us. The Bible does not tell the believer to aggressively attack the devil or the devil’s kingdom in prayer. No, the believer is to fervently reach out in prayer for other saints and for ministers who are reaching the lost.

Another translation of Ephesians 6:18 says, “*Praying with all manner or all kinds of prayer and supplication in the Spirit.*” So just wrestling against the devil all the time in prayer couldn’t be scriptural because it’s not praying with all manner or all kinds of prayer. If we follow the leading of the Holy Spirit, He will lead us to pray with all manner of prayer, not just one kind of prayer, because He will always lead us in line with what the Word says.

Warring Tongues

Some claim that there is an aspect of speaking with other tongues that is used in spiritual warfare against the devil. Supposedly, this is a tongue that only the devil knows, but there is no scripture to support this. Not one single time is tongues mentioned in the Bible in connection with the devil. In regards to the devotional speaking in tongues for the believer, 1 Corinthians 14:2 states, “*no one understands him*” which would include the devil- “*he utters mysteries with his spirit.*” And to what end, edification according to 1 Corinthians 14:4, “*He who speaks in a tongue edifies himself.*”

1 Corinthians 14:2

For anyone who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men but to God. Indeed, no one understands him; he utters mysteries with his spirit.

There is a special manifestation of the Spirit as He wills, in the form of Tongues and Interpretation of Tongues in a group setting according to 1 Corinthians 12:10-11. However, it is always a message given for the edification of the Church.

1 Corinthians 14:5-6

I would like every one of you to speak in tongues, but I would rather have you prophesy. He who prophesies is greater than one who speaks in tongues, unless he interprets, so that the church may be edified. Now, brothers, if I come to you and speak in tongues, what good will I be to you, unless I bring you some revelation or knowledge or prophecy or word of instruction?

In other words, one cannot announce to the people, “Let’s everyone war against the devil in tongues.” If there is an unction that should come by the Holy Spirit in prayer, it’s as the Holy Spirit leads, not as man leads or directs and it will always be in line with the Word of God. Inherently, “Warring Tongues” places too much focus, or attention on the devil rather than on Jesus. Ignoring the biblical use of tongues, this teaching strives to make speaking in tongues something that is done against the devil instead of unto God- 1 Corinthians 14:14-19.

Thank God for praying with other tongues, but let’s not waste our time praying in tongues as a means of trying to defeat an already defeated foe. Instead, yield to the Holy Spirit, and let Him use us as we pray in tongues to be a blessing to humanity. That is the most effective way to gain ground for God and do great damage to the devil’s kingdom of darkness.

Unit 10 Review:

Why should we exercise wisdom when ministering to Christians who need deliverance in public?

So how do we know when a person is being afflicted directly by an evil spirit?

Can a Christian be possessed with an evil spirit in their spirit?

What are two extremes or doctrinal ditches that Christians find themselves in on the subject of demonology?

As Christians, are we at war with the devil?

What does the word “wrestle” mean in Ephesians 6:12 in connection with spiritual warfare?

D) Pulling Down Strongholds?

Evil spirits like to remain in the locality where they have established strongholds. The Bible gives us an example of this in Mark chapter 5 when Jesus delivered the madman of Gadara. The evil spirits that inhabited the man didn't want Jesus to send them out of the country. Those evil spirits didn't want to leave that locality, so they asked to go into a herd of swine. Jesus gave them permission.

Mark 5:9-13 NKJV

Then He asked him, "What is your name?" And he answered, saying, "My name is Legion; for we are many." **Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country.** Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. So all the demons begged Him, saying, "Send us to the swine, that we may enter them." And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea.

We can glean from this passage of Scripture that demons do like to gang up in certain parts of the world or in certain countries. Let's take an account in the book of Daniel, when the Arch-Angel Gabriel came in response to Daniel's prayer in chapter 10. Remember back in Ephesians chapter 6:12 which lists the ranks of evil spirits within Satan's kingdom. The highest level as some translations call them, are "wicked spirits in high places." I believe these to be fallen angels that were in league with Satan in his original rebellion- Revelation 12:4. It appears that Satan has appointed fallen angels as regional rulers over the nations of the earth. When the book of Daniel speaks of the "prince of the Persian Kingdom" and then the "prince of Greece" that engaged the Arch-Angel Gabriel in combat, obviously we are not talking about human princes over these kingdoms. Even the Arch-Angel Michael was called upon to help, and notice that he is called a "chief prince." We know that Michael is an angel and is called a prince, so if the spiritual entities of Greece and Persia are called princes, they most likely are angelic beings- of the fallen variety.



Daniel 10:12-14, 20-21

Then he continued, "Do not be afraid, Daniel. Since the first day that you set your mind to gain understanding and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I have come in response to them. **But the prince of the Persian kingdom** resisted me twenty-one days. Then **Michael, one of the chief princes**, came to help me, because I was detained there with the king of Persia. Now I have come to explain to you what will happen to your people in the future, for the vision concerns a time yet to come." So he said, "Do you know why I have come to you? **Soon I will return to fight against the prince of Persia**, and when I go, **the prince of Greece will come**; but first I will tell you what is written in the Book of Truth. (No one supports me against them except Michael, your prince.)"

Revelation 12:7-9

And there was war in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But he was not strong enough, and they lost their place in heaven. The great dragon was hurled down — that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him.

When we read in Genesis 6:1-4, and it refers to the "sons of God" it was talking about some fallen angels who had cohabited with human women and produced evil giant offspring called the Nephilim-like Goliath. However, these fallen angels crossed a line with terrible consequences- Jude 6.

When traveling, it can be easy to discern what kinds of spirits are in a given locality. One can drive through a city and know what spirits predominate there, not because of any of the spiritual gifts operating, but just by spiritual perception- this should be the case for every Christian. Sometimes there are predominately immoral or occult spirits, or spirits promoting foreign religions. Small towns, not just large cities, can have spiritual strongholds or spirits ruling over them too. The evil spirits that dominate a city will try to get into the local churches if there are people in the church who will yield to them and let them in.

We can see this, for example in Paul's letters written to the Corinthian believers. Corinth at that time was one of the most immoral cities of the East. The immoral spirit that had control of the city got into the church because someone in the church let it in through sin. There was a man in this spirit filled church who was cohabitating with his father's wife so Paul had to deal with it.

1 Corinthians 5:1-5

It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality among you, and of a kind that does not occur even among pagans: A man has his father's wife. And you are proud! Shouldn't you rather have been filled with grief and have put out of your fellowship the man who did this? Even though I am not physically present, I am with you in spirit. And I have already passed judgment on the one who did this, just as if I were present. When you are assembled in the name of our Lord Jesus and I am with you in spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus is present, hand this man over to Satan, so that the sinful nature may be destroyed and his spirit saved on the day of the Lord.

Notice in this passage that Paul only dealt with the man and his sin; he didn't deal with a "ruling spirit" in the church or in the city. This man had opened the door through sin, so Paul was dealing with the man; in order to close the door back on the enemy. Paul goes on to say in the rest of the chapter that as believers we are not even to associate or eat with a person who calls himself a "brother" but is immoral. In the Bible, "Yeast" is used as a type of sin, so Paul warns the church not to tolerate Christians who practice sin, but to judge them and put them out of their fellowship if they refuse to repent. This kind of "Church Discipline" is necessary to protect other believers from being contaminated and fall into sin as well- the result would be a domino effect. Just read Revelation chapter 2-3 and see how Jesus out of love rebuked and disciplined those churches for putting up with sin- Revelation 3:19- *"Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent."*

1 Corinthians 5:12-13

What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside? God will judge those outside. "Expel the wicked man from among you."

So the cure for getting sin out of the local church is not attack the devil, but to get those folks in error to repent or to leave- this may sound harsh but it's Bible- 1 Corinthians 11:29-32. Unfortunately, some people are getting into a ditch with some of the things they are doing in the name of spiritual warfare. Now, spiritual warfare is biblical, but some well-meaning folks have pushed it into the extreme and turned others off from a legitimate and crucial element of the Church.

Some of these dear, misguided people believe they are actually pulling down entire strongholds over cities and nations through such excesses in prayer as "warring" tongues as we have mentioned already. Actually, we have no direct scriptural support for pulling down demonic strongholds over entire cities and nations, especially in the sense of warring tongues and yelling at the devil.

So in what context does the Bible refer to pulling down strongholds, is it in reference to demonic power over cities or nations? And according to the Bible, what is a “stronghold”?

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

Thankfully, Paul explains what a stronghold is. First of all who was he talking to? It was “Christians” with strongholds, pretensions (vain imaginations) and wrong thoughts. There is no mention of cities or nations in these verses of the Bible, folks have interjected these things where they don’t belong and have built an entire theology that is incorrect. Actually, in this passage Paul is talking about a believer taking charge of his mind, his own thinking- getting rid of sinking thinking, that’s all! Paul is addressing the issue of mental bondages, thoughts, reasonings, arguments in the minds of believers which are contrary to God and His Word. Clearly the context here is not demons or unbelievers, but Christians. This passage of scripture is made even clearer along these lines in the Amplified translation:

2 Corinthians 10:3-5 AMP

For though we walk (live) in the flesh, we are not carrying on our warfare according to the flesh and using mere human weapons. For the weapons of our warfare are not physical [weapons of flesh and blood], but they are mighty before God for the overthrow and destruction of strongholds, [Inasmuch as we] refute arguments and theories and reasonings and every proud and lofty thing that sets itself up against the [true] knowledge of God; and we lead every thought and purpose away captive into the obedience of Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).

What the Holy Spirit through Paul is trying to convey to the Church is that the biggest battle we will ever “fight” is in the area of the thought life and the mind. This is where Satan through the power of suggestion tries to plant seeds or weeds to grow in our minds to influence our behavior and ultimately open the door for him to have access to our lives. However, if we promptly remove those thoughts out of our minds by replacing them with God’s Word, nothing comes of it- Praise God, simple isn’t it! This is how we fight the good fight of faith, by persistently standing on and speaking God’s Word continually out of our mouths and putting it into practice in every area of our lives. In this way, the devil has nothing to work with against us, and this is the essence of spiritual warfare for the believer and his/her life!

Clearly the devil’s strategy is to push people into the extremes in regards to “spiritual warfare” in order to sidetrack believers from fighting the true spiritual battle; which is taking every thought captive to the obedience of God’s Word. Satan knows that believers who stay in faith in the Word are dangerous to him because they can fulfill God’s will in the earth for their lives. That’s why Satan likes it when believers get off into error and excess, by trying to fight demonic strongholds over cities and nations. He knows those strongholds can’t be once and for all pulled down before the appointed time, before Adam’s lease on this earth runs out- the Second Return of Jesus. Until that time, the devil and his hosts have a right to be here and dominate those who let them- 2 Corinthians 4:4.

Matthew 8:28-29

When he arrived at the other side in the region of the Gadarenes, two demon-possessed men coming from the tombs met him. They were so violent that no one could pass that way. “What do you want with us, Son of God?” they shouted. “Have you come here to torture us before the appointed time?”

So the devil is laughing the whole time when believers are hollering at him in the flesh trying to pull him down over cities. Believers who fight the devil on those terms are actually defeating themselves by having to continually rely on their own human efforts. They are either trying to pray down the victory that is already theirs, or they are trying to pray down ruling spirits that cannot be pulled down before the appointed time.

Luke 4:5-8 AMP

Then the devil took Him up to a high mountain and showed Him all the kingdoms of the habitable world in a moment of time [in the twinkling of an eye]. And he said to Him, To You I will give all this power and authority and their glory (all their magnificence, excellence, preeminence, dignity, and grace), **for it has been turned over to me, and I give it to whomever I will.** Therefore if You will do homage to and worship me [just once], it shall all be Yours. And Jesus replied to him, Get behind Me, Satan! It is written, You shall do homage to and worship the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve.

Let's look at this passage in second Corinthians in some other translations, so we can better understand of what the Bible is talking about in regards to the word, "Stronghold."

2 Corinthians 10:4-5 Moffatt

The weapons of my warfare are not weapons of the flesh, but divinely strong to demolish fortresses- I demolish theories and any rampart thrown up to resist the knowledge of God, I take every project prisoner to make it obey Christ.

2 Corinthians 10:5 TCNT

We are engaged in confronting arguments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowledge of God...

2 Corinthians 10:5 Phillips

Our battle is to bring down every deceptive fantasy and every imposing defense that men erect against the true knowledge of God...

We can readily see this passage is talking about taking thoughts, imaginations, arguments, theories, reasonings, deceptive fantasies and bringing them into subjection to the true knowledge of God- the Word of God. Therefore, the greatest enemy of the Church and the believer is false teachings that creep in to undermine the truth in an attempt to neutralize the church.

1 Timothy 1:3-5

As I urged you when I went into Macedonia, stay there in Ephesus so that you may command certain men **not to teach false doctrines any longer** nor to devote themselves to myths and endless genealogies. These promote controversies rather than God's work — which is by faith.

1 Timothy 6:3-5

If anyone teaches false doctrines and does not agree to the sound instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, he is conceited and understands nothing. He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words that result in envy, strife, malicious talk, evil suspicions and constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain.

1 Timothy 4:1- The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons.

2 Peter 2:1-3

But there were also false prophets among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who bought them — bringing swift destruction on themselves. Many will follow their shameful ways and will bring the way of truth into disrepute. In their greed these teachers will exploit you with stories they have made up. Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping.

2 Peter 3:15-16

Bear in mind that our Lord's patience means salvation, just as our dear brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom that God gave him. He writes the same way in all his letters, speaking in them of these matters. His letters contain some things that are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.

Jude 3-4

Dear friends, although I was very eager to write to you about the salvation we share, I felt I had to write and urge you to contend for the faith that was once for all entrusted to the saints. For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord.

Revelation 2:20-21

Nevertheless, I have this against you: You tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. By her teaching she misleads my servants into sexual immorality and the eating of food sacrificed to idols. I have given her time to repent of her immorality, but she is unwilling.

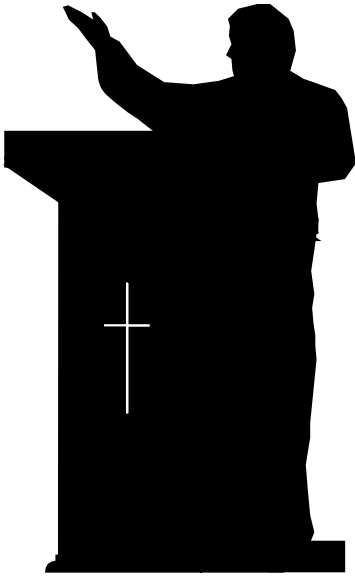
It's amazing when studying the Epistles (Romans - Revelation), letters to the churches, how much material is devoted to the subject of false teaching. This is the greatest threat to the church and explains the rise of all the false religions and cults in the world today. These religious spirits push their doctrines of demons to hold people in bondage through deceptive lies and half-truths. One of the greatest challenges for me as a teacher, is by God's grace is to straighten out wrong religious thinking that has denied believers of God's highest and best for their lives. There are countless Christians today who think it is God's will for them to suffer for things that was never God's will for their lives. Think of all those unfortunate souls who want to know God and go to heaven, but are going to hell because they have embraced the lies of Jehovah Witnesses and Mormonism that deny Jesus as Lord and Savior. Consider the strong words of Paul in Galatians 1:6-9, for those who pervert the gospel of Christ- eternally condemned! It's such a strong warning for the perpetrators and to us that he repeats it twice.

1 Timothy 4:16, "*Watch your life and doctrine closely. Persevere in them, because if you do, you will save both yourself and your hearers.*"

Galatians 1:6-9

I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel— which is really no gospel at all. Evidently some people are throwing you into confusion and are trying to pervert the gospel of Christ. But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the one we preached to you, let him be eternally condemned! As we have already said, so now I say again: If anybody is preaching to you a gospel other than what you accepted, let him be eternally condemned!

The Lord Jesus counters this threat to His Church by setting ministry gifts in place in order to keep the record straight. By preaching and teaching the truth, we will all grow up into Christ and mature spiritually so we won't be taken in by this clear and present danger.



It was he who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, to prepare God's people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ. Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming. Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will in all things grow up into him who is the Head, that is, Christ. From him the whole body, joined and held together by every supporting ligament, grows and builds itself up in love, as each part does its work.

Ephesians 4:11-16

The Greatest Act of Spiritual Warfare

The greatest act of spiritual warfare that the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ can afflict on the kingdom of darkness is in getting people saved and the teaching and preaching of the Word of God. It's the truth that sets people free, getting folks to know and then act on God's Word is the crux to spiritual warfare. Unfortunately, many believers are barking up the wrong spiritual tree in this matter.

Jude 22-23

Be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear-hating even the clothing stained by corrupted flesh.

John 8:31-32

To the Jews who had believed him, Jesus said, "If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free."

Acts 19:17-20

When this became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor. Many of those who believed now came and openly confessed their evil deeds. A number who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas. **In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power.**

Please don't misunderstand me, I believe in spiritual warfare, and in spiritual militancy in the sense of being aggressive and fervent in the Word and in the Holy Spirit. Be aggressive to preach and teach God's Word. Be aggressive and committed to preach the new birth, the baptism of the Holy Spirit, healing, and the believer's rights and privileges in Christ. Be aggressive to preach faith and prayer and to preach against devils and demons. Notice that the emphasis is on the Word of God and not on the devil. We become God and Word conscious instead of devil and demon conscious- it's all about our focus, please keep it on Jesus!

One of the outstanding reoccurrences in the earthly ministry of Jesus was that of His teaching ministry- why do you think that is? Well, 1 John 3:8 tells us that Jesus came to destroy the works of the devil, and that was primarily done by teaching the Word which makes people free.

Mark 1:21-23

They went to Capernaum, and when the Sabbath came, Jesus went into the synagogue and began to teach. The people were amazed at his teaching, because he taught them as one who had authority, not as the teachers of the law.

John 8:1-2

But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. At dawn he appeared again in the temple courts, where all the people gathered around him, and he sat down to teach them.

Wherever Jesus went He was constantly opening His mouth to teach and preach the Word to people- this my friends is the greatest act of spiritual warfare and Satan hates it. Jesus even instructed His disciples to do the same.

Matthew 11:1

After Jesus had finished instructing his twelve disciples, he went on from there to teach and preach in the towns of Galilee.

After the resurrection of Jesus, the early Church began to grow as a result of the ministry of God's Word. Peter preached the gospel in Jerusalem in Acts chapter 2 and about 3,000 of them were saved- that was a real blow to the kingdom of darkness. For Satan, that translated into less people he could control and dominate for his evil purposes. What really chaffed the religious leaders of that day was when the apostles taught the people about Jesus- knowledge is power! In Acts chapter four, more people were getting saved and the knowledge of Jesus was spreading, so something had to be done.

Acts 4:1-2

The priests and the captain of the temple guard and the Sadducees came up to Peter and John while they were speaking to the people. They were **greatly disturbed because the apostles were **teaching the people** and proclaiming in Jesus the resurrection of the dead.**

Acts 4:16-20

What are we going to do with these men?" they asked. "Everybody living in Jerusalem knows they have done an outstanding miracle, and we cannot deny it. But to stop this thing from spreading any further among the people, **we must warn these men to speak no longer to anyone in this name." Then they called them in again and commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John replied, "Judge for yourselves whether it is right in God's sight to obey you rather than God. For we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard."**

Well, the apostles did not take the hint and stop proclaiming Jesus to the people. So next the religious leaders put the apostles in jail to try and shut them up, but God sent an angel to set them free and please take note of what the angel had told them to do.

Acts 5:20-21

"Go, stand in the temple courts," he said, "and **tell the people the full message of this new life." At daybreak they entered the temple courts, as they had been told, and began to teach the people.**

At all costs, the devil through intimidation, threats and persecution is trying to shut the mouths of Christians. That is one valuable asset of being baptized with the Holy Spirit; boldness to preach the Word in the midst of adversity- Acts 1:8. Another key to spiritual warfare is signs and wonders. When God manifests in supernatural ways to heal, deliver and set people free; that brings glory to God and diminishes the power of darkness. However, Jesus only confirms His Word with signs following.

Mark 16:20- Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Acts 5:15-18

As a result, people brought the sick into the streets and laid them on beds and mats so that at least Peter's shadow might fall on some of them as he passed by. Crowds gathered also from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing their sick and those tormented by evil spirits, and all of them were healed. Then the high priest and all his associates, who were members of the party of the Sadducees, were filled with jealousy.

Jesus and the early church was sent to teach and preach the gospel, not to focus on tearing down strongholds over cities and nations- Mark 16:15-18; Matthew 28:18-20. It was the preaching and teaching of the gospel that brought strongholds down in people's lives! If it were possible to tear them down over cities, Jesus would have taught people to do that, but He didn't. The Bible says Jesus set the captives free from Satan's bondage by teaching the people what the Word says and to walk in the light of the Word- John 8:32. We need to do what Jesus did and what Paul told Timothy in 2 Timothy 4:2- "Preach the Word!" Preach deliverance by preaching the Word. Notice Luke 4:18 doesn't say Jesus prayed for deliverance. It says He preached deliverance and then the people were delivered. People were delivered as the Word set them free. In the scriptures that we do have, Jesus prayed His prayers to the Father- Matthew 11:25; Luke 23:24; John 11:41, 17:1.

Luke 4:17-21

The scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written: "The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me **to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord's favor." Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him, and he began by saying to them, "Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing."**

Nowhere in the gospels or in the book of Acts do you see any references to pulling down strongholds over cities. What we do see is a whole lot of ministry of the Word of God wherever they went and God confirming His Word with signs and wonders. We can overcome the enemy's strategies just as the Early Church did, not by focusing our attention on fighting a defeated foe or by trying to pull down demonic strongholds over cities, but by praying and releasing our authority in Jesus' Name scripturally. We have authority to bind principalities and powers in their operations against us and others if they want it. And we can pray to God for people's hearts to be open to the gospel. Then we need to get out and preach the Word and tell people about their covenant rights in Christ so they can be set free. Besides, have you ever been to those countries where people have supposedly pulled down demonic strongholds over them? It's interesting that after they're "pulled them down," they are still there! That's because it's only the Word that changes people and affects nations and brings people out from under Satan's dominion and bondage so they can learn to stand against him and enforce his defeat like the rest of us. Satan is the god of this world and will continue to be until his time is up, but in the meantime he is not god over my life or my home. Nor does he have to continue to be god over the lives of the lost if they would just come to Jesus. So the secret is more of Jesus through the Word, which results in less of the enemy in folk's lives.

‘Tormenting’ the Devil

As long as we are talking about tactics against the devil that don’t work and are harmful to the Body of Christ, there’s another practice that’s wreaked havoc in some churches today in these so-called “Deliverance Schools.” Really they could be called “schools of bondage” because they teach people to be devil-conscious and to fear the devil- this is nothing new. One aspect of these schools is to instruct folks to yell at the devil for hours. Claiming they were tormenting the devil; in reality all they were being was ignorant. It reminds me of the chaos and confusion that unbelievers found themselves in over spiritual things when Paul encountered persecution in Ephesus. Notice these folks hollered for hours too, at the top of their lungs I might add.

Acts 19:32-34

The assembly was in confusion: Some were shouting one thing, some another. Most of the people did not even know why they were there. The Jews pushed Alexander to the front, and some of the crowd shouted instructions to him. He motioned for silence in order to make a defense before the people. But when they realized he was a Jew, they all shouted in unison for about two hours: “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!”

Again, it’s another ditch the enemy wants to get believers into in order to waste their time and make them ineffective. Some believers seem to think yelling at the devil shows their authority over him. But the devil doesn’t have to bow to the loudness of a person’s voice. He isn’t afraid of noise- he invented rock music right? What he is afraid of is the Name of Jesus which slaps him down and puts him in his place. He fears the believer who stands in his authority in Christ. The devil doesn’t have to cease and desist in his operations against us based on how loud we can yell at him. But he does have to stop in every strategy against us when we exercise our authority in Christ. We just have to know our rights and privileges in Christ and enforce Jesus’ victory over Satan with God’s Word.

Where folks get off on this notion is found in Mark 5:7 and Luke 8:28. However, in Matthew 8:29 it says, “*What do you want with us, Son of God?*” they shouted. “*Have you come here to torture us before the appointed time?*” Jesus could not “torment” these evil spirits yet, neither can we. Until Adam’s lease runs out, demons and evil spirits are here on earth. But, thank God, the day is coming when they will be cast into their eternal abode and be tormented for all eternity- Revelation 20:1-3.

E) Praying Scripturally

If believers are not to pull down strongholds in the sense of doing unscriptural things like warring in tongues in the heavenlies, then how can we pray so that our prayers will affect change in our cities and nations?



First and foremost, the Body of Christ needs to realize that it’s only through the Word of God that grows and prevails in people’s lives. The Word of God will grow and prevail over any circumstance, any demon, or any force of the devil in any person’s life or in any nation if it is planted in the ground prepared by prayer and watered by the Word and the Holy Spirit.

Producing a Crop through the Word and Prayer

A great revivalist once said, “It is no more supernatural for believers to have a revival than it is for farmers to reap a crop.” He meant that the same principles for sowing and reaping a crop apply to both the natural and spiritual realms.

A harvest doesn't just happen for no reason or by accident, nor does it happen overnight. The Bible calls people who are ready to receive the gospel, a spiritual harvest.

- 1- The farmer prepares the ground
- 2- He plants the seed
- 3- The Sun, Rain and irrigation cause the crop to grow
- 4- Finally the crop is reaped for a harvest



Spiritually, we prepare the ground of people's hearts through scriptural prayer and sowing the incorruptible seed of God's Word- 1 Peter 1:23. The Word has to be sown in people's hearts through the preaching of the Word, because it is the Word that brings light and illumination to men's hearts to set them free from the dominion of the devil- Psalms 119:130. If believers only prayed in regard to the harvest, but no one ever sowed the Word, there would never be a harvest of souls. It doesn't matter how good the seed is or how well-prepared the ground is, if there is no water or rain, there will be no crop and no increase. In the Bible, water is a type of both the Word and the Holy Spirit- John 4:10; 7:38; Ephesians 5:26. The rain mentioned in James 5:7 in this verse is a type of the Holy Spirit and in Zechariah 10:1 states to ask the Lord to send the rain.

James 5:7

Be patient, then, brothers, until the Lord's coming. See how the farmer waits for the land to yield its valuable crop and how patient he is for the autumn and spring rains.

Zechariah 10:1

Ask the Lord for rain in the springtime; it is the Lord who makes the storm clouds. He gives showers of rain to men, and plants of the field to everyone.

First Rain:

To prepare the ground for the seed of the Word to be planted, we can pray for an outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon all nations. Without hearts being softened, God's seed will fall on hard hearts- Mark 4:15.

Sow the Seed:

But then someone will have to go and preach the gospel in order to set people free because it is the Word that sets people free- John 8:32. That is the scriptural way to change nations; by praying according to God's Word and by sowing the incorruptible seed of God's Word.

More Rain:

Next, it is scriptural to ask for the rain of the Holy Spirit to be poured out upon every nation to cause the seeds of the Word that **have been planted** in people's hearts to grow.

Laborers:

No matter how good the harvest is, if there are no laborers to reap the harvest, the precious fruit of the earth will not be gathered in.

Matthew 9:37-38

Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest is plentiful but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."

So just keep asking the Lord for the rain of the Holy Spirit, keep preaching the Word to people and keep praying for laborers to be sent forth. Then there will be a harvest of souls that will be brought into the Kingdom of God. That's how to scripturally change cities and nations, because it's based solidly on God's Word, God will bring the increase.

1 Corinthians 3:5-8

What, after all, is Apollos? And what is Paul? Only servants, through whom you came to believe — as the Lord has assigned to each his task. **I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God made it grow. So neither he who plants nor he who waters is anything, but only God, who makes things grow. The man who plants and the man who waters have one purpose, and each will be rewarded according to his own labor.**

Preparing the Ground through Prayer

Praying for revival effects change in cities and nations by pushing back the darkness that blinds people from understanding the gospel message and so be saved. The ministry of Charles Finney, the great revivalist, gives insight into how to prepare the way for revival through prayer that is based firmly on the Word.

2 Corinthians 4:4 AMP

For the god of this world has blinded the unbelievers' minds [that they should not discern the truth], preventing them from seeing the **illuminating light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ (the Messiah), Who is the Image and Likeness of God.**

Finney had revivals in city after city. Sometimes almost entire cities would get saved when he came and preached there. That's invading the kingdom of darkness! Most students of church history would agree that Finney had the greatest success at soul winning of anyone since the Apostle Paul. It's a historical fact that eighty percent of all Finney's converts remained faithful to God in their Christian walk. In most of the other great revivals in history, not even fifty percent of the converts continued to live for the Lord. When asked the secret of his success in ministry, Finney simply said, "The secret is prayer. I always get up at four o'clock every morning and I pray from four o'clock to eight o'clock in the morning. I've had some experiences in prayer that indeed alarmed me. I found myself saying, 'Lord, you don't think we're not going to have revival here, do You!' And then I found myself quoting scripture after scripture to the Lord, reminding Him of His promises."

Isaiah 43:26

Put Me in remembrance; Let us contend together; State your case, that you may be acquitted.

Finney pled his case with God for revival in the cities where he would be preaching based on the promises in God's Word. He simply put God in remembrance of what He has said in His Word. He prayed according to the Word for revival- for souls to come into the Kingdom of God. There isn't one account given that Finney ever pulled down demonic strongholds, prayed against devils, or dealt with ruling princes over cities, yet whole towns were won to the Lord where Finney preached.

Finney also talked about a man named Father Nash who supported Finney in prayer. Sometimes Father Nash would go ahead of Finney to the next city where Finney would be preaching to prepare the way in prayer for revival. Once when Finney came to a particular city and began his meetings, a woman came to him and said, "About a week ago, Father Nash rented a room from me. After three days, I wondered why he didn't come out of his room, so I went up to his door and I could hear Father Nash groaning. I thought something was wrong with him, so I opened the door and peeked in. There he was, lying in the middle of the floor, groaning and praying."

Finney answered, “Don’t worry about Father Nash, sister. Just leave him alone. He just has the burden of intercession to pray for lost souls.” You see, Father Nash wasn’t pulling down strongholds or fighting demons who were ruling over cities where Finney was going to be preaching. He was praying according to Romans 8:26, as the Holy Spirit helped him pray for lost souls with groaning that could not be uttered in articulate speech- this travail in intercession can be likened unto a woman having a baby, loud groans and cries. The key is to pray through until the burden of prayer lifts and is replaced with joy or quiet peace. This kind of intercession in tongues according to Romans 8:26 is as the Holy Spirit wills. We need to make ourselves available for the Spirit of God to use us when the need arises. We need to realize that the Holy Spirit may lead a person to pray in private in ways that would be wrong in a public setting. For instance, many people, especially if unbelievers are present, wouldn’t understand if a person suddenly got down on the floor at church and began groaning and carrying on in prayer in travail.

Romans 8:26

In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express.

Thousands of souls were won to the Kingdom of God through Finney’s ministry. Finney accomplished that by praying for souls (the precious fruit of the earth) and by preaching the Word. Biblical prayer and intercession prayed by the power and the anointing of the Holy Spirit affects change in cities and nations for the Kingdom of God. When the burden of prayer comes from the Holy Spirit, if God’s people would just be sensitive enough to yield to Him and enter into intercession and travail for the lost in their city, our nation would be transformed!

We already know what God’s will is on the matter, He wants everyone to come to repentance and receive the gift of eternal life through Jesus Christ. When we ask the Lord for our city and nation, we have to be willing to take possession of it. And the way we take possession of it is through intercessory prayer and travail for the lost. In Isaiah 66:8, speaks to us of the Church entering into travail and bringing forth spiritual children out of the kingdom of darkness and into the Kingdom of God.

Psalms 2:8

Ask of me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession.

Isaiah 66:8

Who has ever heard of such a thing? Who has ever seen such things? Can a country be born in a day or a nation be brought forth in a moment? Yet no sooner is **Zion in labor than she gives birth to her children.**

We can intercede on behalf of others with our understanding, as Finney did when he pled his case with God using the promises in God’s Word. However, there are times when we don’t know how to pray for folks and we move into the areas of deep intercession – 1 Corinthians 14:14; Romans 8:26. Praying for the lost in this manner is part of the scriptural way to win a city for God. To win a city, we must win souls. Winning a city for God doesn’t necessarily mean that every single person in that town would be saved, because people still have a free choice. However, prayer and intercession make it easier for people to yield to God and to desire to be saved which translates in many people coming to the Lord. We can see that success in fulfilling the Great Commission is a combination of Prayer and the Word. Neither are to be done to the exclusion of the other. Some may say, “Why do we need to pray if all we need is the Word?” I once read a statement by John Wesley that answers that question. Wesley said, “It seems that God is limited by our prayer life. He can do nothing for humanity unless someone asks Him.”

James 4:2- “You do not have, because you do not ask God.”

John 16:23-24

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete.

God waits for His children to ask him to move on behalf of the lost. Asking based on God's Word is the way believers stand in their place of authority in Christ and enforce Satan's defeat on the earth.

Stand in the Gap

God can only move on this earth as His people ask him to move. God is longing today for someone to make up the hedge and stand in the gap before Him and intercede for souls in every nation. That's a scriptural way to win cities and nations to God. In Ezekiel 22:30, God said He had to destroy the land because as a just God, He had to pronounce a penalty on sin according to Ezekiel 22:31, "...*bringing down on their own heads all they have done...*" The scripture implies that if God could have found someone to stand in the gap and build up the wall and intercede for the land- no judgments would result.

Ezekiel 22:30

"I looked for a man among them who would build up the wall and stand before me in the gap on behalf of the land so I would not have to destroy it, but I found none."

Genesis 18:22-33



The men turned away and went toward Sodom, but Abraham remained standing before the Lord. Then Abraham approached him and said: "Will you sweep away the righteous with the wicked? What if there are fifty righteous people in the city? Will you really sweep it away and not spare the place for the sake of the fifty righteous people in it? Far be it from you to do such a thing — to kill the righteous with the wicked, treating the righteous and the wicked alike. Far be it from you! **Will not the Judge of all the earth do right?"** The Lord said, "If I find fifty righteous people in the city of Sodom, I will spare the whole place for their sake." Then Abraham spoke up again: "Now that I have been so bold as to speak to the Lord, though I am nothing but dust and ashes, what if the number of the righteous is five less than fifty? Will you destroy the whole city because of five

people?" "If I find forty-five there," he said, "I will not destroy it." Once again he spoke to him, "What if only forty are found there?" He said, "For the sake of forty, I will not do it." Then he said, "May the Lord not be angry, but let me speak. What if only thirty can be found there?" He answered, "I will not do it if I find thirty there." Abraham said, "Now that I have been so bold as to speak to the Lord, what if only twenty can be found there?" He said, "For the sake of twenty, I will not destroy it." Then he said, "May the Lord not be angry, but let me speak just once more. What if only ten can be found there?" He answered, "For the sake of ten, I will not destroy it." When the Lord had finished speaking with Abraham, he left, and Abraham returned home.

The same thing had happened with Abraham interceding on behalf of Sodom on account of his nephew Lot who was living there. It was because of the covenant that Abraham had with God that enabled him to be bold and question God's justice in condemning the righteous with the wicked. These verses say that if God's covenant children would just ask Him to move on the earth, He would hear and answer their prayers- Satan is no match for God!

The unsaved people of the world are dominated and ruled by the devil- not God. Therefore, they are destined to “bringing down on their own heads all they have done” as stated in Ezekiel 22:31. Unless of course they hear and receive the truth of the gospel and repent. God looks for those who will boldly ask Him to hold back judgment and give the unsaved more time to repent and come to the knowledge of the truth. These are the principles in God’s Word on which we are to build doctrines for prayer and for taking cities and nations for God. God watches over His Word to perform it; not doctrines that are built on experiences or isolated texts taken to the extreme- Isaiah 55:11; Mark 16:20.

Praying for Those in Authority

Another scriptural way to pray to win cities and nations for God is found in the Book of Timothy. We are instructed to pray for those in authority. It stands to reason that if people in positions of authority in a nation change to God’s glory, then God has more liberty to move in that nation, so the devil’s plans are thwarted and men are saved.

1 Timothy 2:1-4

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone— for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. This is good, and pleases God our Savior, who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.

Notice that Paul said in 1 Timothy 2:1, “...first of all...” That means we are to pray for all men and women who are in positions of authority before we pray for ourselves or our own families. We pray for those in authority as a priority so that we can affect changes in the nations of this world, “...*that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness.*” Yes there are ruling spirits over cities and nations that influence people who are in authority. Although we can’t “pull down” those demonic strongholds once and for all; however, as for the leaders of nations, we can thwart and render inoperative the devil’s strategies on the earth and cause God’s purposes to prevail.

However, praying for those in authority doesn’t mean we are to pray that the politicians in our favorite political party will be voted into office. We can’t judge by political party alone which candidate is best to fill the leadership positions in our nation. It’s not about personalities but about praying for the right candidate be elected to office. We may all have our opinion who is the right one for office, but only God knows for sure. Therefore, we just need to pray that God will have His way in the matter.

The goal of praying for those in authority is so there will be peace in our nations. Then we can experience prosperity and liberty to preach the gospel undisturbed. As long as the devil has nations in an upheaval and embroiled in war, we can’t lead a peaceful and quiet lives and preach the gospel unhindered to the ends of the earth. Jesus is continually making intercession for us in Romans 8:34.

2 Thessalonians 3:1-3

Finally, brothers, pray for us **that the message of the Lord may spread rapidly and be honored, just as it was with you. And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men, for not everyone has faith. But the Lord is faithful, and he will strengthen and protect you from the evil one.**

So the most important reason God wants us to pray for the leaders of nations is so the gospel can be preached and people can be delivered out of the kingdom of darkness. God’s plan and purpose is for the Church to preach the gospel to every nation. Matthew 24:14, “*And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.*” This is a scriptural way we render the devil’s work inoperative upon the earth.

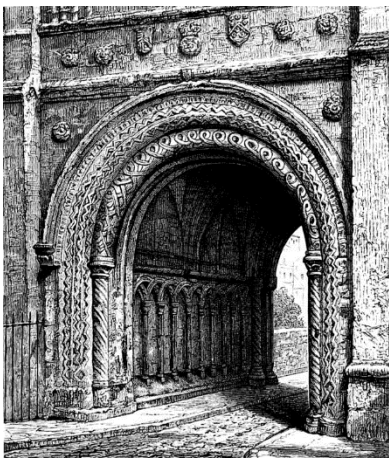
The devil has a problem with that phrase, “...then the end will come.” That does not quite fit in his plans, he does not want the end to come, because that is when he is finished. Therefore, world events are being influenced by Satan throwing up every roadblock he can to prevent the gospel from being preached in all the world- Mark 16:15. In times of turmoil and war, it’s more difficult to spread the gospel. However, it’s up to Christians whether or not the devil succeeds in his individual strategies against them. As we obey the Bible’s instruction to pray for those in authority and for nations of the world, we can help thwart Satan’s plans and instead fulfill God’s purposes on the earth- it’s up to us!

Christians have authority to pray in Jesus’ Name and change things in their country, no matter what country they live in. When we pray, we give God permission to move and rule in the situation instead of Satan, the god of this world, no matter what the situation is. When Christians stand in their place of delegated authority, and pray in Jesus’ Name, God brings many into His Kingdom. We don’t fight the devil to gain this authority. The authority has already been given to us in the Name of Jesus- Matthew 28:18-20. When we take our stand in prayer, we are simply exercising the authority Jesus has obtained for us. We have the authority in Jesus’ Name to bind the power of the devil over the political scene of a nation. We have the right to demand that Satan take his hands off the government and the economic and social scene of a nation. We bind every foul spirit that is affecting these areas and command them to stop in their maneuvers and cease and desist in their actions against us- Matthew 18:18; John 14:13-14.

Satan’s strategies against us on earth can be stopped in every encounter, and God’s purposes can be fulfilled; as Christians stand in their place of authority in Christ on behalf of the nations of the world by praying for those in authority. In this way God, not Satan, can have dominion in our city or nation.

Limits to Our Authority

A person’s authority in the natural realm and in the spiritual realm can only be exercised so far. For example, a believer has authority over the powers of darkness in his own home and for his own family- Acts 16:15, 31; Matthew 8:1-13. But when a believer gets beyond his own authority or jurisdiction as he prays for others, he will have to get their permission in order to exercise any spiritual authority on their behalf.



That’s the reason Jesus told us to pray in agreement in Matthew 18:19, and get both parties to agree together on God’s Word. If we pray beyond our realm of authority for someone else, that person needs to be in agreement with us so our prayers can be effectual. We also need to understand the limitations of our authority over Satan’s kingdom if we are to deal effectively with the devil. For instance, we have authority to break the power of the devil over people’s lives in the Name of Jesus (Matthew 18:18-19; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Philippians 2:9-10) and make it easier for them to accept Christ. But they still have a free choice and can choose to accept Jesus or reject Him. By breaking the power of the devil over a person’s life, that person is unhindered from Satan’s influence so he/she can make a free decision for Christ. In reference to

the same principle, there are limitations to how the believer can exercise his authority in regard to demon activity. In other words, I can deal with the devil in my own life, but I can’t necessarily deal with the devil in someone else’s life unless that person gives me authority to do so- they may want the devil in their life. Every person has a right to choose who they will serve, and we won’t be able to violate their will. A person’s will has a lot to do with their own deliverance. That’s why we need to teach people their own responsibility in dealing with the devil, which is to stay full of the Word and full of the Holy Spirit and learn to bind and stand against the devil for themselves.

For example, when folks come to me for help, I can usually help them because by coming to me for help, they are giving me permission and authority to help them. As long as they are in control enough mentally to give me this authority, I can help them. Otherwise, I'd need a supernatural manifestation of the Spirit in operation to set them free.

Smith Wigglesworth tells a story which helps illustrate the believer's realm of authority. Wigglesworth traveled by ship from the United States to England, and a stranger occupied the same cabin with him. It was a young man, and he was sick in bed when Wigglesworth entered the cabin. The man was just skin and bones, and he told Wigglesworth, "I'm going to England. My father has just died, and I've inherited his estate. But I'll just drink it up; I'll lose it all in gambling and drinking. I've drunk so much that I can't eat anything; I've got ulcers of the stomach." Wigglesworth had never met this man before, but he said, "Just say the word, and I can get you delivered." The man said, "Yes, I want to be delivered." Wigglesworth laid hands on him and cast an evil spirit out of him, and the fellow was instantly healed. After that, the young man was totally set free and could eat every meal while he was on board that ship.

There's a scriptural principle involved here. Wigglesworth said to him, "Just say the word." You see, even though Wigglesworth had the ability in Jesus' Name to set the man free, he didn't have the authority to do anything for him until the young man gave him permission or authority to deal with the devil in his life. Until the man gave Wigglesworth permission, Wigglesworth couldn't help him. We can't make people accept Christ or make anyone want to be delivered or to choose what God has for them, because people have a free will. However, we can pray for them and bind the power of the devil over their lives, and that would give them an opportunity to make a choice unhindered by Satan's influence, but they still have to choose.

Deuteronomy 30:19-20

This day I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. Now choose life, so that you and your children may live and that you may love the Lord your God, listen to his voice, and hold fast to him. For the Lord is your life, and he will give you many years in the land he swore to give to your fathers, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

There is a principle here that Christians need to realize about the limitations of our authority over the devil in other people's lives. The mind is the door to the heart. If a person's mentality is such that you can communicate with them, and they give you permission, you can deal with evil spirits in their life. But if the person doesn't give you permission, or if they want to keep the evil spirits, you won't be able to deal with the devil in their life. If a person's mind is not functioning properly and they can't give you permission, then you can help that person only if the Lord gives you a supernatural operation of a gift of the Spirit to deal with the evil spirit that's harassing them. Or if the person can sit under the teaching of the Word for a period of time, they can be set free. Remember, we are pointing out the limits to our authority in the spiritual realm.

Some believers make the mistake of taking one scripture like Mark 16:17, "*And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons,*" and they try to cast the devil out of everyone they meet. The problem is, Jesus didn't do that when He walked upon this earth; neither did the apostles. Therefore, it couldn't be right for us to do it either. In fact, there's no pattern in the New Testament for trying to indiscriminately cast devils out of everyone we meet. Many times well-meaning Christians see the authority they possess in Jesus' Name, they get carried away in their excitement and start believing they can cast the devil out of everyone. They think, *I AM someone. I DO have power. I CAN work miracles or I CAN work in the supernatural realm.*

No, they can't work the supernatural power of God on their own! No one can. The Holy Spirit is the Wonder Worker, not man. And we need to depend on Him to lead us in wisdom according to the Word in our dealings with the devil.

The devil has no right to trespass on God's property- my life. But how much authority over the devil do we have when we are on Satan's territory- like going to a bar? If we get over on the devil's territory out of disobedience, ignorantly, or curiosity, he's got a right to jump on us. If we are on his territory, we won't be able to keep the devil from attacking us. Believer's have authority over the devil on their own property and they have authority when they are preaching the gospel on the devil's territory by the leading and direction of the Holy Spirit.

Acts 16:6-10

Paul and his companions traveled throughout the region of Phrygia and Galatia, having been kept by the Holy Spirit from preaching the word in the province of Asia. When they came to the border of Mysia, they tried to enter Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus would not allow them to. So they passed by Mysia and went down to Troas. During the night Paul had a vision of a man of Macedonia standing and begging him, "Come over to Macedonia and help us." After Paul had seen the vision, we got ready at once to leave for Macedonia, concluding that God had called us to preach the gospel to them.

For example, missionaries are always invading the devil's territory with the good news of the gospel, and they have authority over him in the Name of Jesus. However, if believers go on the devil's territory because they are walking in disobedience and against the light of God's Word, they give the devil a legal right to attack them. Yes, we have to deal with the devil, but remember, we can't stop him from ruling as the god of this world. But we can bind him in his operations against us, and we can preach the truth to people to let them know they don't have to be dominated by the devil anymore. Through biblical prayer and preaching the Word, we can help bring people out of the kingdom of darkness, and into the Kingdom of God. That's how we scripturally turn a city or nation upside down for God- Acts 17:6 AMP, *"These men who have turned the world upside down have come here also..."*

F) Is Deliverance Ministry Scriptural

Despite the error that is being taught about deliverance and demonology, deliverance is scriptural. If you are a Christian, healing and deliverance belongs to you. We need to realize that the word "deliverance" doesn't just mean deliverance from demons- there is a much greater application of the word. Actually, freedom from anything that would try to bind us is part of our redemptive rights in Christ. For that reason we should never allow anything from Satan to bring us into bondage. That redemption includes deliverance from any direct or indirect satanic bondage- spirit, soul and body. So healing and deliverance is part of our covenant rights when we accept Jesus as our Savior- Matthew 8:17; Luke 10:19; 1 Peter 2:24.

1 Corinthians 6:12-13

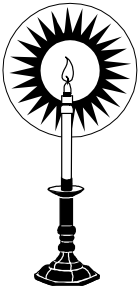
"Everything is permissible for me"-but not everything is beneficial. "Everything is permissible for me"-but I will not be mastered by anything. "Food for the stomach and the stomach for food"-but God will destroy them both. The body is not meant for sexual immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.

The greatest form of deliverance ministry is getting the Word of God into folks so that faith will rise up in their own hearts and they learn to resist the devil for themselves- because what gets us delivered keeps us delivered. People can be healed and delivered just by simply acting on the Word for themselves- this method is God's highest and best!

Although it's not possible for a Christian to be possessed by a demon in their spirit, a believer can be oppressed in mind or body by demons. But the real truth about the matter is, only a small percentage of believers will ever have a demon in their mind or body. But most of the so-called "deliverance ministries" today claim that the majority if not all Christians have devils that routinely need to be cast out- that is nonsense! When it comes to ministering to folks, the only way we will know a demon is present is if the Holy Spirit reveals it to us and tells us to do something about it. Otherwise, we should just minister to people by faith in God's Word and by the anointing of the Holy Spirit- both of these ways are scriptural.

It's sad that many of these so-called "deliverance ministries" today find themselves continually needing to minister deliverance to the same people over and over again. If that's the case, something is wrong, why aren't people being taught how to resist the devil for themselves. The fact that folks have become dependent upon someone else for their deliverance is not biblical. Notice in the Bible that when Jesus or one of the apostles dealt with a person who had demons, they spoke to the evil spirit and it left. They didn't spend hours, days, or weeks trying to get the devil to come out of the person. When people spend hours trying to get rid of a demon in someone, it means they are trying to minister deliverance in the flesh. If deliverance is ministered by the Holy Spirit, under His power, unction and direction, results are forth coming and the person doesn't need to have repeated deliverances.

When only the Word can get the job done!



John 8:31-32 AMP

So Jesus said to those Jews who had believed in Him, If you abide in My word [hold fast to My teachings and live in accordance with them], you are truly My disciples. And you will know the Truth, and the Truth will set you free.

Continuing in God's Word will bring a knowledge of the truth and when this truth is acted upon, it will bring freedom. So let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly- Colossians 3:6. It's knowing and acting on the Word that sets us free- John 6:63; 2 Timothy 3:16. The Word is anointed and it's this anointing of the Holy Spirit on God's Word that gets the job done- Isaiah 10:27 KJV "*...and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing.*" So when a person teaches or preaches the Word, the Word will deliver those who believe and act on the Word they hear.

The problem with prayer lines in most churches is they are trying to do through prayer and laying on of hands what only the Word of God will do!

We can have all kinds of deliverance meetings and prayer for people to be set free- even using the Name of Jesus. We can have all kinds of physical manifestations, but they don't have any power. This often times will bring temporary relief, but folks seem to slip right back into the same ole bondage. What is the key for permanent results for people to walk in perpetual freedom- only the Word! Thank God for prayer, it is important and has its place and so does deliverance meetings. Folks have tried to do for the people what only the Word of God can do. Prayer can never take the place of the Word just as breathing cannot take the place of eating. They are both important, but the Word is what feeds our spirit, not prayer. If we don't eat then breathing will quit after a while and vice versa.

Let's start teaching people the truth and that is the only thing in the final analysis that will permanently deliver and set people free! God's Word brings results, the seed is the Word, sow the seed and the seed will produce it.

Physical Manifestations Are Not Necessary in Deliverance

Another extreme deliverance teaching in our day is that the devil has to manifest himself in order to be cast out. Some people are always wanting to see manifestations. Some believers seem to be more interested in demonic manifestations than they are in Holy Spirit manifestations. Some ministers teach as doctrine that people must cough or vomit or have some other kind of physical manifestation in order to get rid of a demon.

This is not new, but runs in cycles because Satan is the same old deceiver as he has always been. Don't misunderstand me, there may be occasions when a demon will manifest itself when it leaves someone. For example, the Bible says a demon manifested itself as it came out of a child who had a dumb spirit.

Mark 9:26-27

The spirit shrieked, convulsed him violently and came out. The boy looked so much like a corpse that many said, "He's dead." But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him to his feet, and he stood up.

In dealing with the devil, don't ever tell anyone to cough or vomit up a demon. Expelling a demon through coughing or vomiting may happen occasionally- if it does fine. But don't ever tell anyone to put on any kind of a physical manifestation in order to get delivered of an evil spirit. If we do tell people that some physical manifestation is to come forth, they'll try to put on a physical manifestation, and instead of getting rid of a demon, they'll open the door and get one.

This is where folks are missing it. Just because some kind of a physical manifestation occurs one time when a demon leaves someone's body or mind, some people think, evidently that's the way it's supposed to happen every time.

Believers who go around seeing devils in other believers are creating havoc in the local church body. Some people who became so devil-conscious because of extreme teaching in this area, actually got an evil spirit when they didn't have one before.

Receiving "Words" From the Lord

There is another extreme practice pertaining to deliverance in the Body of Christ today. Some believers are always giving out personal "words" of prophecy, telling others what demons they have. I don't care who the person or minister claims to be and if they say "Thus saith the Lord..." If what they say doesn't line up with the Word of God, and it doesn't bear witness with your own spirit, forget it.

The devil tries to torment people, and he can get away with it when believers are ignorant of their rights and privileges in Christ and they aren't familiar with the whole counsel of God's Word. Some believers who try to operate in spiritual gifts act like children playing with toys. Misguided people can misuse and abuse the operation of the gifts of the Spirit and just talk out of their own minds. Or even worse, they can yield to familiar spirits. This hurts innocent people and allows the devil to take advantage of them.

It's through erroneous teachings and practices like this that many people have become afraid of evil spirits and the devil- it's really not necessary. If believers would receive solid scriptural teaching in this area, that wouldn't happen. Believers aren't to fear Satan, because Jesus already defeated him on the Cross of Calvary. The Body of Christ isn't a defeated Church, always running away from Satan in fear. We are seated with Christ in heavenly places, and we are to exercise our position of authority in Jesus' Name- we are the Church triumphant!

In The Final Analysis

In studying Jesus' deliverance ministry, we'll also see that the Bible differentiates between healing the sick and casting out devils. In other words, Jesus didn't always cast out devils to get the sick healed, because not every sick person had demons in them causing the sickness. What this means to us is that there are no ironclad rules; we'll have to follow the Holy Spirit in ministering to the sick and oppressed, just as Jesus did.

Study the Gospels for yourself and see how Jesus dealt with evil spirits. You'll find that at times Jesus dealt with evil spirits in order to heal sickness and disease- Luke 13:11-13, 16. At other times Jesus merely healed the person using a variety of methods- Matthew 8:16; 9:22, 29. Jesus also used various methods in dealing with demons and evil spirits. He didn't always cast them out. He dealt with them by other methods too.

Matthew 8:16

When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick.

In some cases of sickness, the sickness or disease is a result of natural causes, but indirectly it's still satanic oppression. If sickness is the result of natural causes, the person needs to be healed- they don't need evil spirits cast out of them. On the other hand, sometimes an evil spirit is present enforcing a disease or infirmity- we will only know by the Holy Spirit. If the Holy Spirit doesn't reveal the presence of an evil spirit, we can help people get healed by teaching them faith in God's Word.

However, I am thoroughly convinced that a number of different ailments can be dealt with only by dealing with evil spirits. And in those cases, unless the evil spirit is dealt with by the power and direction of the Holy Spirit, we can anoint people with oil and lay hands on them until we've worn every hair off their heads, but we still won't get results.

Those kinds of sickness don't respond to the usual Biblical methods of ministering healing. In those cases, the evil spirit has to be dealt with by the unction and leading of the Holy Spirit. That's the reason some cases of sickness don't respond to medical treatment. Sickness that are caused by the actual presence of an evil spirit can't be treated with natural remedies- consider the woman oppressed by a spirit of infirmity in Luke 13:11-13, 16.

Often times, the problem is found in a classic case of empty hands being laid on empty heads. Folks trying to minister in the flesh and not the anointing of the Holy Spirit. It was the Word that Jesus taught and the anointing that brought deliverance to those who were afflicted by demons. Likewise, today we will also have to minister deliverance by the Word of God and the anointing- the power of the Holy Spirit. 1 Corinthians 4:20, *“For the kingdom of God is not a matter of talk but of power.”*

Luke 6:17-19

He went down with them and stood on a level place. A large crowd of his disciples was there and a great number of people from all over Judea, from Jerusalem, and from the coast of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and to be healed of their diseases. Those troubled by evil spirits were cured, and the people all tried to touch him, because power was coming from him and healing them all.

1 Corinthians 2:4-5

My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the Spirit’s power, so that your faith might not rest on men’s wisdom, but on God’s power.



It was the anointing on the Word that set people free. Faith comes by hearing the Word of God, and it is by faith that we receive the promises of God, including deliverance from any kind of bondage. Faith in the Word of God is the key that opens Heaven and activates the power of God to work in a person’s life no matter what kind of demonic activity or influence is involved. When Jesus taught the people the Word of God, preached deliverance to the captives and the people believed the Word, they were healed and delivered. In Luke 6:17-19, not one evil spirit was cast out of anyone. As far as we know, not one evil spirit was even discerned. Yet when those who were troubled by evil spirits heard what Jesus taught and they were delivered, what delivered them? It was the Word that Jesus taught and the power of the Holy Spirit. The same results are available today for those who will act on the anointed Word of God in faith.

Note, we don’t have to pray long for something that has already been promised in God’s Word. When it comes to healing, it is already a forever settled fact that by His bruising and stripes we were healed. Therefore, it becomes a matter of receiving healing rather than trying to get God to send healing to us. Here’s where a lot of folks miss it. When they don’t make their connection in prayer, they don’t stop to listen to the Spirit of God and find out why they haven’t received. They just go on without checking with God, we need to inquire of the Lord and ask for wisdom as to where we are missing it.

Then we need to let the Holy Spirit correct us if we need correction. This takes humility to admit that maybe we have missed it in the area of prayer and faith, so let's back up and correct our mistakes. God's Word always works when followed according to directions.

If the Holy Spirit leads us to do something that does not make sense to our mind, remember that Jesus spit in the dirt to make mud in order to heal the blind man- John 9:7. Well, in the natural, what good would mud do to heal that man? But, we see, its faith and obedience that counts with God. It's just best to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit and do what He tells us to do. That always brings results! The Holy Spirit will always lead us in line with God's Word, and what He tells us to do will always work. Many times we can lay hands on folks and it's like getting a hold of a live wire; we know they are in faith and are believing God. But we can lay hands on other people and it's like laying hands on a doorknob. Somehow or another, the power of God is sort-circuited, because God is always willing to heal just as He is always willing to save people from their sins without exceptions.

Mark 6:4-6

Jesus said to them, "Only in his hometown, among his relatives and in his own house is a prophet without honor." He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. And he was amazed at their lack of faith. Then Jesus went around teaching from village to village.

Whether we are ministering deliverance, praying for the sick, or just taking a stand against the devil in our own life- keep in mind that Satan is a defeated foe. If you are a believer, you are seated with Christ in heavenly places now. Jesus' victory over the devil is your victory because you are in Him. Ministering deliverance is scriptural, but we can't go beyond the Word and the leading of the Holy Spirit. That is how people have gotten into error and excesses in deliverance ministry and have caused much harm to the Body of Christ. Let's just stick with the Word and follow Jesus' example of ministering deliverance to the sick and oppressed.

1 Corinthians 4:6-7

Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself and Apollos for your benefit, so that you may learn from us the meaning of the saying, "Do not go beyond what is written." Then you will not take pride in one man over against another. For who makes you different from anyone else? What do you have that you did not receive? And if you did receive it, why do you boast as though you did not?

Unit 11 Review:

Is it true that evil spirits tend to be territorial and influence the churches in those areas- explain?

What is the essence of spiritual warfare?

Can we use our authority in Jesus' Name to pull down enemy strongholds over cities and nations?

What was the greatest threat to the Early Church and to the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ today?

How can we as believers inflict the greatest damage to the kingdom of darkness?

A spiritual harvest doesn't just happen for no reason or by accident; what are the principles involved?

7. Common Questions Concerning Demons

Note: Most of this material was taken primarily from Kenneth E. Hagin's "Bible Answers to Man's Questions on Demons"

Question: Can a Christian have a demon?

Answer: There is no such thing as a Christian being demon possessed. To be demon possessed means to be completely taken over – spirit, soul, and body – by the devil. This was the case with the madman at Gadara in Mark 5.

A Christian, on the other hand, can be oppressed. Demon activity concerning Christians will either be in the body or the mind. The Holy Spirit is in our spirit- a demon can't be there.

1 Corinthians 6:18-20

Flee from sexual immorality. All other sins a man commits are outside his body, but he who sins sexually sins against his own body. Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own; you were bought at a price. Therefore honor God with your body.

Question: Does the presence of sickness and disease always indicate demonic activity?

Answer: The devil is behind all sickness and disease. But that doesn't mean there is the literal presence of an evil spirit in a person. The Bible teaches that all sickness is oppression of the enemy- either directly or indirectly. Sometimes there is the literal presence of a spirit there. In some cases a demon that brought a certain sickness may remain in the body and enforce sickness, so that demon has to be dealt with.

Luke 13:11-13, 16-17 NKJV

And behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bent over and could in no way raise herself up. But when Jesus saw her, He called her to Him and said to her, "Woman, you are loosed from your infirmity." And He laid His hands on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. So ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound — think of it — for eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath?"

Acts 10:38 AMP

How God anointed and consecrated Jesus of Nazareth with the [Holy] Spirit and with strength and ability and power; how He went about doing good and, in particular, curing all who were harassed and oppressed by [the power of] the devil, for God was with Him.

Termites in the house analogy! You can have termites in your house (Physical body) but not in you personally (spirit man).

A Christian walking with God can't be taken over by the devil. In fact, the devil can't do anything in him without his permission. Ephesians 4:27 AMP- Leave no [such] room or foothold for the devil [give no opportunity to him].

Remember sickness and disease is always Satanic Oppression in one form or another.

Luke 4:38-39

Jesus left the synagogue and went to the home of Simon. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever, and they asked Jesus to help her. So he bent over her and rebuked the fever, and it left her. She got up at once and began to wait on them.

Notice that healing and dealing with evil spirits are often mentioned together!

Matthew 10:1

He called his twelve disciples to him and gave them authority to drive out evil spirits and to heal every disease and sickness.

Mark 3:10-12

For he had healed many, so that those with diseases were pushing forward to touch him. Whenever the evil spirits saw him, they fell down before him and cried out, "You are the Son of God." But he gave them strict orders not to tell who he was.

Luke 6:18-19

People had come to hear him and to be healed of their diseases. Those troubled by evil spirits were cured, and the people all tried to touch him, because power was coming from him and healing them all.

Luke 7:21

At that very time Jesus cured many who had diseases, sicknesses and evil spirits.

Luke 8:2

Also some women who had been cured of evil spirits and diseases: Mary (called Magdalene) from whom seven demons had come out.

Acts 5:16

Crowds gathered also from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing their sick and those tormented by evil spirits, and all of them were healed.

Acts 8:7-8

With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city.

Acts 19:11-12

God did extraordinary miracles through Paul, so that even handkerchiefs and aprons that had touched him were taken to the sick, and their illnesses were cured and the evil spirits left them.

Question: Should you talk to demons when calling them out?

Answer: Did you ever notice that Jesus would tell them to be quiet? There's no Scripture in the New Testament where He ever held a conversation with demons at length.

Mark 1:23-26

Just then a man in their synagogue who was possessed by an evil spirit cried out, "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of God!" "Be quiet!" said Jesus sternly. "Come out of him!" The evil spirit shook the man violently and came out of him with a shriek.

Behind every vice known to man there are demonic spirits to encourage and energize the flesh to commit those acts. If a person yields to it long enough a demonic stronghold in their life will develop.

Galatians 5:19-21

The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

There are many kinds of spirits. There are deceiving spirits, lying spirits, religious spirits, homosexual and lesbian spirits, deaf and dumb spirits, and many more- Mark 9:25.

Ephesians 6:12-13

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.

Question: Can a person be possessed by more than one demon?

Answer: No, only one evil spirit does the possessing, but it can invite many others to join it. Notice also from Mark 5:8-13, demons first choice is to possess a person, but their second choice would be an animal. Demons are disembodied spirits, so they need a physical body in order to find expression, just as we need our physical body to express ourselves in this world. Notice also that they did not want to be cast out of the area; demons are very territorial, wanting to operate in specific geographical areas. Hence the character of a city or region will take on the personality of the demonic spirits that operate there. The Holy Spirit will give us insight into this at the time.

Mark 5:8-13

For Jesus had said to him, “Come out of this man, you evil spirit!” Then Jesus asked him, “What is your name?” “My name is Legion,” he replied, “for we are many.” And he begged Jesus again and again not to send them out of the area. A large herd of pigs was feeding on the nearby hillside. The demons begged Jesus, “Send us among the pigs; allow us to go into them.” He gave them permission, and the evil spirits came out and went into the pigs. The herd, about two thousand in number, rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned.

Question: When dealing with demons in a person’s life, what is the next step once the person has been delivered?

Answer: When a person is delivered from sin, from sickness, from the devil, or from anything, he immediately needs to be pushed into the discipline of confessing God’s Word, testimony of their deliverance to others and get active, serving in the Kingdom of God- Mark 5:19.

Question: Will the devil try to return after he has been cast out?

Answer: The devil always will endeavor to go right back to the place he has left. That is a spiritual principle explained for us in:

Luke 11:24-26

“When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first.”

If you get saved, the devil will try to get back in your life; he’ll try to get you to do wrong. If you were delivered of sickness, he’ll try to put the same thing back on you. In dealing with demons in the lives of Christians, you must be careful to get the Word into people. Otherwise you’ll do them an injustice, because they may wind up seven times worse than what they were.

Question: How much authority do we have to keep devils off our property?

Answer: The Church of the Lord Jesus Christ has more authority than we have realized yet. The “rock” Jesus was referred to in Matthew 16:18 was the revelation that, “Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God.”

Matthew 16:16-20

Simon Peter answered, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.” Jesus replied, “Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah, for this was not revealed to you by man, but by my Father in heaven. And I tell you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build my church, and the gates of Hades will not overcome it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.”

When we speak God’s Word concerning the redemptive realities that we were bought by the blood of Jesus and declare that over our property, our children and our lives- Satan can’t trespass.

Revelation 12:11

They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony.

1 John 5:18

We know that anyone born of God does not continue to sin; the one who was born of God keeps him safe, and the evil one cannot harm him.

Ephesians 1:7

In him we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, in accordance with the riches of God’s grace.

Question: Do we have authority over others’ wills?

Answer: Often we try to take the authority we have in our own lives and exercise it in somebody else’s life. But we don’t have it. You see, you can run the devil off from your own life, but you can’t always run the devil off from somebody else’s. I can handle my own finances, but I can’t always handle your finances unless you turn them over to me. So a person has to want to be delivered and give you permission to take authority over the enemy in their life.

We cannot intrude into other people's lives without their consent. As long as a person's own mentality and will is at work and he can control himself. He has a lot to do with his deliverance. You must teach people their responsibility to agree with you. The greatest form of deliverance is when the believer stands up and speaks the Name of Jesus, putting the devil on the run in their own life!

James 4:7- Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

Question: How much authority over the devil do we have when we are in his territory?

Answer: The devil has no right to trespass on God's property. But if you trespass on the devil's property, he's got a right to attack you. God can't keep him from it, and you can't keep him from it, because you're on his property.

It's like this: I don't have authority in your house or apartment. I can't go there and say, "We're going to move everything out of this room and sell all of it." In the house of God, if the devil comes around, we've got authority. But if we go to the devil's house and try to exercise authority, he may throw us out. For instance if you go to a strip club and congregate there, you are on the devil's turf, other folks want to be there and their free-will is involved. Can we pray against that place and do spiritual warfare through intercession in a prayer meeting, absolutely- there is no distance in the spirit.

Literally speaking, if you go to places controlled by Satan, you can get attacked. Spiritually speaking, if you get into disobedience, you get spiritually over into the devil's territory. You can claim protection, however, and go wherever you have to go; especially when you go in the name of Jesus as an ambassador of Christ as God leads you to witness and pray in dark places- be led by the Spirit.

Question: What are the most important qualifications for success in dealing with devils?

Answer: If we know God has planned to use us in a certain way, we can prepare ourselves so we'll be more efficient in that area. You prepare yourself by fasting and praying, by waiting on God. By meditating in the Word, and by living right. There are two things that are important if you're going to deal with devils: (1) You've got to live right. If you don't live right. You won't have any confidence and the devil will laugh at you. (2) You have to have boldness. And you can't be bold unless you know your rights and privileges in Christ Jesus.

Question: How do you stop demonic activity that is causing believers to hinder the work of the church?

Answer: If anyone is harassing, intimidating, embarrassing, or deterring the ministry of the church, you know that's the devil. You don't have to have discerning of spirits. You don't have to see the devil. You don't have to know it supernaturally. That's just the devil. Any Christian can put a stop to that kind of activity in the privacy of his own home. You don't have to go out and broadcast it. You don't have to deal with the person. Just say, "You foul spirit that's operating through so-and-so (and call the person's name), embarrassing, intimidating, harassing, or deterring the ministry of the church, I command you to stop in Jesus' Name."

Believers can unconsciously yield to the devil and be used of the devil. But that doesn't mean they're unsaved or demon possessed. It takes time and experience to learn not to yield to the devil. This can apply not just to the church but folks who are causing grief in your own life.

Mark 8:33

But when Jesus turned and looked at his disciples, he rebuked Peter. “Get behind me, Satan!” he said. “You do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men.”

2 Timothy 2:25-26

Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will.

Question: Can demons manifest themselves in the physical realm?

Answer: Yes, although we have the authority to stop those supernatural manifestations. When Dr. Lester Sumrall was building a church in the Philippines in the 1950s, he heard on the radio about a girl who would fight with something nobody could see, though people could see tooth marks and saliva on her. She had to be confined in a jail cell.

Doctors and psychiatrists examining her asked her what had been biting her. She said, “There are two hairy looking monsters. One is big and the other is small, and they attack me.” They were demons manifesting themselves in the physical realm. Of course, she was not a Christian.

Dr. Sumrall got permission to see her. When he first entered the jail cell, the devil supernaturally spoke through her in English, “I don’t like you.” The devil cursed him, cursed God, cursed Jesus, and cursed the blood. After Dr. Sumrall got the girl delivered, she couldn’t speak a word of English. He had to communicate with her through an interpreter.

The devil had spoken out of her mouth supernaturally. Those tooth marks were real. That wasn’t the girl talking in English, saying, “I don’t like you.” It was the devil. So the devil can do some supernatural things, but, thank God, we do have authority over him.

Acts 19:13-16

Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, “In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out.” Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. [One day] the evil spirit answered them, “Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?” Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding.

Question: Is alcoholism a demon?

Answer: There’s no doubt in my mind that alcoholism is a demon. I’ve had any number of people tell me, “Brother Hagin. When you laid hands on me, an anointing came into me and I was delivered from alcoholism.”

Question: How do you help someone receive deliverance from smoking?

Answer: A man came to me in tears after a night service. He said, “Brother Hagin, you haven’t condemned me, but my own heart condemns me. I’m 63 years old. I’ve smoked cigarettes since I was 12. I want to be free. Can you help me?”

I said, "I certainly can. All you have to do is give me permission to do it." He said, "I give you permission. I want to be helped." I laid my hand on his shoulder and said, "In the Name of Jesus, I break the power of nicotine over your life. And I am going to say this by faith: The next cigarette you smoke will make you sick." Praise God, that is just what had happened!

Question: How can you help a person who is being hindered by the devil from speaking in tongues?

Answer: Demons attempt to hinder people in every aspect of spiritual life. They try to keep people from all the blessings of God. Christians who have felt too timid to testify or to pray in public have had their tongues loosed instantly in the Name of Jesus. We always must be sensitive to the Holy Spirit when dealing with people. In praying for Christians to be filled with the Holy Spirit, for instance. Sometimes it is the devil who's holding them back. It isn't always the case, but I am sensitive to the Holy Spirit when I pray with people, and I know when it is.

I knew that it was this way with one woman when she told me how many years she had been seeking. I laid my hand on her shoulder and said, "I rebuke you, foul spirit of doubt in the Name of Jesus, leave this woman!" Instantly, she started talking in tongues. This has happened time and time again. I just lay my hands on the person's shoulder, and very calmly, very quietly, sometimes under my breath, I say, "I rebuke every devil that is holding this person." Instantly they lift both hands and start talking in tongues.

Question: Is it necessary to look a demon possessed person in the eye to get him delivered?

Answer: You have to make contact with a person's eyes sometimes before you can get the devil out of him. Sometimes a person's spirit is trying to hide. But you can get hold of his spirit with your spirit and instantly he'll receive deliverance.

Question: Does God tell us to pray that He'll do something about the devil?

Answer: No. The Scriptures say for you to resist the devil and he'll flee from you (James 4:7). You is the understood subject of the sentence. Peter says, "Your adversary" (1 Peter 5:8). (Adversary means, enemy, opponent, or one arrayed against you.) Yes, we've got an enemy, an opponent, one who is arrayed against us. Satan is the god of this world, seeking whom he may devour.

Peter's writings were addressed to Christians. The adversary is not walking about seeking how many sinners he may devour; it's the saints he's after. What are you going to do about it? Stick your head in the sand like an ostrich and pray that he'll go away? Roll over and play dead like a possum? Remember Paul said, "Neither give place to the devil" (Ephesians 4:27). That means, "Don't you give the devil place in you." It means he can't take any place unless you give it to him, doesn't it? How are you going to keep him from it? You resist him with the Word and he will flee from you!

Luke 10:17-20

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, "Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name." He replied, "I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you. However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven."

Question: Is it harmful to talk about the devil's power?

Answer: You can give place to the devil by giving him more credit than God. In church, some people give more praise to the devil than to God. Born-again, Spirit-filled people praise the devil more than they do God. Some people say "I'll tell you, the devil is here." At a place where I preached one time, the pastor got up and said, "The devil is here. He's got us all bound up. I don't know how in the world Brother Hagin is going to preach in this kind of atmosphere. We're going to hurry up here – and turn him loose."

When I got up I said, "No, you're not going to turn me loose. I haven't been bound to begin with. I'm already loose! Now it's been said, 'The devil's here.'" (You see, the more they talked about the devil, the more frightened they got. They had been saying, "The devil's here, the devil's taken over, the devil's got it." The devil, the devil, the devil – that's all they talked about.)

I said, "The devil will come to church more regularly than most faithful saints. But what of it? Jesus is here, God is here, the Holy Spirit is here. Greater is He that's in me than he that's in the world!" The people started straightening up in their chairs when I started talking about God. I said, "I don't know if Jesus came with you, but He came with me. Even if you didn't bring Him, I did, He's here. What do we care about the devil?"

Many people talk about what the devil is doing and how he's keeping them sick and unsuccessful. They give the devil dominion over them. But if you'll talk about what God's Word says, the devil will run from you in terror. You have authority because of the Name of Jesus!

Hebrews 13:5-6

"Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you." So we say with confidence, "The Lord is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?"

Matthew 28:20- And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Matthew 18:18-20

"Assuredly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. Again I say to you that if two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in My name, I am there in the midst of them."

Question: Have you ever cast out demons that were manifesting in someone's home?

Answer: Yes, I was holding a meeting for a pastor and his wife almost 20 years ago, and they invited me to their home. Both of them were ministers of the Gospel. As we were sitting there talking, the wife said, "Brother Hagin, I don't know how to say this to you, but this house we're living in has manifestations of evil spirits."

I don't know why she didn't do something about it. She had the authority, she just didn't know it. The pastor (he was one of the top men in his Full Gospel denomination) would hear the evil spirits go through the house and knock things over. His wife said, "I've actually spoken to one and its spoken back to me. I've told it to go and it didn't."

I said, "I'll take care of that for you." "Will you?" they asked. "We've thought about moving." "No," I said. "I'll take care of it. You won't ever see or hear these manifestations again in the Name of Jesus."

Just sitting there at the table, speaking in an ordinary conversational tone, I said, "In the Name of Jesus I command every evil spirit to leave, and all demonic activity in this home to cease." I told the couple, "Now it's gone; you'll never hear or see those demons again." They told me last year – 19 years later – there was never another manifestation of that power. The pastor told me he almost had been embarrassed when his wife had brought the subject up. But I'm not embarrassed to know the devil and demons are real, are you? They were real in Bible times, and they're just as real now as then. I'm not afraid of them, and you ought not to be – not if you're a Christian that is.

2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV

For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.

Question: Once you've been delivered, how can you make sure you keep that deliverance?

Answer: After a person gets delivered, he needs to change his ways – his lifestyle – his thinking. Even Christians need to change a lot of times. If you keep on thinking like you were thinking, the devil will come right back. This may sound strange to you, but it's absolutely the truth. Sometimes after people are healed or delivered. I know they will wind up worse than they were to begin with.

How do I know? They are still speaking negatively or thinking wrongly. They will wind up in the same mess they were to begin with, or worse. It is a fact that the devil will try to come back. He's here, that's his job. I wish you could get Christians to be as faithful on their jobs as the devil is on his.

To stay delivered. People need to read the Bible. They need to depart from evil and do good. They need to walk in close fellowship with God through the Word and through daily prayer.

Colossians 3:16-17

Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly as you teach and admonish one another with all wisdom, and as you sing psalms, hymns and spiritual songs with gratitude in your hearts to God.

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18 NKJV

Rejoice always, pray without ceasing, in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

Final Exhortations

The main hindrance to our spiritual initiative in prayer comes from the neglect of reading and feeding on the Word. It is evidence of a low type of spiritual fellowship with God. When we lose our spiritual edge, we lose something that would drive us through to victory in hard places. It is time for us to give ourselves over to the study of the Word. It is the personal study of the Word that counts. Whenever our faith loses its aggressiveness, the senses have gained the ascendancy.

Whenever spiritual things take second place, it is evidence that the realities of the divine things of God in our lives are losing out. Living in this world becomes more real and demanding of our attention, which translates in us getting our focus off of Jesus. Living solely in the natural realm like the world, will dominate our decision making at crucial junctures of our life; instead of following the still small voice of the leading of the Holy Spirit, we lean to our own understanding instead.

We assent to the Word instead of acting upon it; we lose our spiritual edge. Boldness to fiercely confess God's Word wanes, and we shrink back. This is the moment the devil is looking for, signs of weakness that he can exploit and move in and run us over.

Mark 4:18-19

Still others, like seed sown among thorns, hear the word; but the worries of this life, the deceitfulness of wealth and the desires for other things come in and choke the word, making it unfruitful.

Hebrews 12:2-3

Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Colossians 3:1-4

Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things. For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

2 Timothy 2:4

No one serving as a soldier gets involved in civilian affairs — he wants to please his commanding officer.

The cure my dear brother or sister is to get back to our first love for God and His Word; giving ourselves over to the Bible. We must refuse to give up our bold confession; stand on God's Word once again! We have seen the marvelous possibilities that belong to the believer who knows the authority and power that is invested in the Name of Jesus, and this knowledge carries with it a responsibility that cannot be ignored.

We can never be the same kind of Christian that we have been in the past. We have caught a glimpse of what we might do if we dared to use the authority that is now our own- now let's follow through, stepping up to the plate, embracing our God given mission to use that Name and help those around us.

There are many sick in body, sick in mind and spirit, countless needy folks that are crying out for deliverance that only Jesus' Name can bring. There are those bound by habits whom Satan rules with a merciless hand that could be set free if we would only take our place. We are the only Jesus some folks will ever see in this life!

Acts 10:38

How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.

Unit 12 Review:

Should you talk to demons when calling them out?

Will a demon try to return after it has been cast out?

What are the most important qualifications for success in dealing with demons?

Is it necessary to look a demon possessed person in the eye to get him delivered?

Is it harmful to talk about the devil's power?

Once you've been delivered, how can you make sure you keep that deliverance?
